

No Matter What

Author not credited

STORYPDF

Complete English text · US Letter reading edition

Contents

CHAPTER 1	6
CHAPTER 2	13
CHAPTER 3	21
CHAPTER 4	29
CHAPTER 5	38
CHAPTER 6	45
CHAPTER 7	53
CHAPTER 8	59
CHAPTER 9	66
CHAPTER 10	73
CHAPTER 11	80
CHAPTER 12	87
CHAPTER 13	94
CHAPTER 14	101
CHAPTER 15	106
CHAPTER 16	111
CHAPTER 17	115
CHAPTER 18	119
CHAPTER 19 .	123
CHAPTER 20	127
CHAPTER 21	131

CHAPTER 22	135
CHAPTER 23	139
CHAPTER 24	143
CHAPTER 25	146
CHAPTER 26	150
CHAPTER 27	153
CHAPTER 28	156
CHAPTER 29	159
CHAPTER 30	163
CHAPTER 31 .	166
CHAPTER 32	170
CHAPTER 33	173
CHAPTER 34	177
CHAPTER 35	180
CHAPTER 36	184
CHAPTER 37	187
CHAPTER 38	191
CHAPTER 39	194
CHAPTER 40	197
CHAPTER 41	200
CHAPTER 42	203
CHAPTER 43	206
CHAPTER 44	209

CHAPTER 45	212
CHAPTER 46	215
Chapter 47	218
CHAPTER 48	222
CHAPTER 49	225

About this edition

This StoryPDF reading edition contains the complete English text, with its original paragraph and section order preserved.

Newly typeset with selectable text, a linked contents section and chapter bookmarks. Copyright rules can differ by country. Corrections and rights enquiries: liuxinglianxue@gmail.com.

Read online: [StoryPDF / No Matter What](#).

Reading edition: 2026-10-28. Typography: Crimson Text (SIL Open Font License).

CHAPTER 1

Friday evening after work me and my best friend Iris, we both go to our favorite café to have milkshakes, cookies and chats and gossips all week.

Iris: Finally the weekend is here, I'm so relieved.

Cassie: My God! Yes. This week was tiring. It feels like Friday came after two damn weeks.

Iris: What! Are you kidding me? This week was amazing for me.

Cassie: Yeah yeah! I know, because your father is not in New York, right?

Iris dramatically said: oh Cassie! You know me too well. By the way what are you doing after this?

Cassie: Well first I'm visiting your brother's school because the children must be waiting for me, well actually they wait for all the candies I buy for them.

Iris laughed hard.

Cassie: Then I have a date with Sammy tonight.

Iris: What? I thought someone told me no time for girls night out tonight!

Cassie: Okay don't get too emotional because after the date, I have to work up all night. That's why I'm not even going home tonight.

Iris: So, you're coming over.

Cassie: Yep! Staying at your place. I need your lab to work tonight.

Iris: Well you know you don't have to ask for my permission to use my things. Just like I don't bother asking before using your things.

Cassie: Haha! And I don't mind that you know. Well I better get going. I don't wanna be late. I'm going to Chris'. I need to get back before 7. I can't go on a fancy date in my work clothes.

Iris: Yeah yeah! Don't even bother explaining it to me. I don't wanna Know a thing about that fame starved boyfriend of yours. I don't know how you're even with him. I remember you never even liked men like him.

Cassie: Well, to be honest, I also don't know, I still think it's just a joke or dream or something. But really he's not so bad. I mean we're together for two years.

Iris: Oh! You can stay with anyone more than longer. It's him who surprises me.

Cassie: See, In a while you'll like him too.

Iris: Yeah! It hasn't happened in two and a half years since we met him.

Cassie: Hush! I'm still hoping for good.

With that I got up, Start walking towards my car and Iris shouted.

Iris: Remind my brother he also has a biological family.

Cassie: Haha! Fine. I'll tell him that.

Chris, Christopher Liam Hunt, Son of my boss and he has no interests in his family business. He made his own dreams come true. He worked so hard for years and created a school for all kinds of handicap children. I visit them every Friday with lots of candies and I wait all the week to spend time with all those kids and also with Chris. He is a great teacher, well at least for me. Whenever I have an issue I can't resolve, I talk to Chris, well yeah, He is a psychologist but still he knows how to resolve my issue. Or at least give me ideas so I can resolve my problems by myself.

I parked my car in the lot and I heard CANDIES ARE HERE.

Miss polly: Cassie is here with candies children.

Seth: Sorry miss Polly! Everyone, Cassie is here...

Miss Polly is one of the teachers in Chris's school. She is very lovely and sweet.

Miss Polly: Sorry the kids do that sometimes.

Cassie: It's ok. I like to see them excited. Go everyone candies are waiting for you in my car.

Riley asked me in sign language: Where are my candies?

I replied to her in sign language: Your candies are in the driving seat. Go get them, girl.

She laughed and ran towards my car. Riely is a deaf and dumb child. She can't hear or speak. So just for her I learned sign language from Chris to talk to her without anyone's help.

Miss Polly: She just loves you.

Cassie: Yeah and I love her too. Now tell me where is your boss?

Miss Polly: Oh! Mr. Hunt is in his office. Just be careful, today is not a good day.

Cassie: Oh! One of those days.

Miss Polly: Yep! One of those days.

Chris and his father, My Boss, are very much alike. Except for the anger. In 8 years, I can't remember Mr. Hunt getting angry like Chris. Chris ain't got angry easily but once he gets angry his staff avoid facing him.

Chris to his staff: I clearly told you all about this week's schedule then why nobody followed?

Staff member: Sir we...

Chris: I don't want your explanation, I want answers. And I....

Just then I stepped in and clapped my hands once.

Cassie: Okay everyone the meeting is over. You all can go now.

Chris: What? Cassie....

Cassie: Shhh! I'm talking here.

Staff members mouthed the words before leaving.

THANK YOU....

With that I turned to Chris who is now smiling and not angry anymore.

Cassie: you're welcome, Mr Hunt.

Chris: You're a disaster Cassie. You Know I have to put a sign board just for you not to come in my room while I'm in a meeting.

Cassie: Meeting! Really? You call it meeting, you were eating them alive.

Chris: Anyways, What would you like to have?

Cassie: Well my original favorite.

Chris ordered on the phone: " Hot chocolate and chocolate chip cookies for two."

Then he put his work aside, leaned over on his desk and asked me.

Chris: So what is bothering you Miss Wolf?

Cassie: Well, you know, It's Sam

Chris raised a brow and ask,

Chris: What about him?

Cassie: I don't know, I'm a little confused about him. I mean I really don't understand what he wants? It's like I'm not even in this relationship. Two days ago, I let down Iris for the girls night

out and yesterday he asked.. no actually he ordered me for a date tonight and I had to agree. Sometimes I think Iris is right about him.

Chris smiled

Chris: He is just a different kind of guy. He first set up everything and then asked you out. Just give him and your relationship some time.

Cassie: It's been two years Chris.

Chris: I know, just trust me and give it some time. Bad things happen to us because we don't give time to our relationships.

Cassie: Hmmm... Talking about relationships, What about you?

Chris: What about me?

Cassie: Well you had a date last Saturday I remembered. How it went?

Chris: It didn't work out.

Cassie: But...

Chris: Drop it. Your hot cocoa is here.

Cassie: Well cookies reminded me of something. Your sister told me to tell you, Oh no... She told me to REMIND you that you also have a biological family.

Chris smiled but I could see the sadness in his eyes.

Chris: Well they don't have to remind me anything.

Cassie: Oh my God! I'm late and now I don't have much time.

Chris: Don't make puppy faces, you brought your dress with you?

Cassie: Yes!

Chris: Ok then, Feel free to use my bathroom.

Cassie: Chris, you're a lifesaver.

I hugged him from behind and they walked out of his room to get my dress.

A bit later when I walked back in his room he was busy with his work so I quietly stepped in the bathroom for shower. Twenty minutes later I got out of the bathroom fully dressed and ready to go. I walk towards the mirror in his office to check myself one last time. I felt Chris was staring at me so I asked awkwardly..

Cassie: Chris, Why are you staring at me?

Like my voice just snapped him out of his thoughts. He replied with a smile.

Chris: Nothing.

I felt the awkwardness as well so I changed the subject.

Cassie: So I have to find you another date now?

Chris: No. Thank you very much. I'm happy with whatever I have.

Cassie: Oh my God Chris! Will you please stop? Look whatever Emma did to you, you just stopped living your life. Can't you just give it another chance?

Chris: Cassie I can't expect anyone to understand my work or dreams. It's impossible. My parents, my sister. Hell! Even my ex wife. They all hate my job.

Cassie: Well I don't hate it.

Chris: Well you don't because you have a big heart Cassie.

Cassie: And your family don't?

Chris: I didn't say anything like that. Now aren't you getting late? Get out of my office.

Cassie: Fine fine. I'm going but this conversation is not over yet. I'll be at your place tonight and you're gonna answer me.

Chris: Cassie be careful and if it gets late tell Sam to drive you back or call me. Understood?

Cassie: Yes Boss!!

An hour later the cab pulled in front of a gorgeous restaurant where Sam made the reservation. I walked towards the host and asked.

Cassie: Dinner for two, Sam Peterson's reservation!

Host: Yes miss you must be Miss Wolf?

Cassie: Yes

Host: Follow me ma'am. Mr Peterson is waiting for you.

Host took me to the table and left when Sam nodded at him.

Sam: There you are beautiful, What took you so long, I couldn't wait to see you.

Cassie: Relax Sammy. I'm here now. The traffic was extraordinary tonight.

Sam: Yeah baby. I noticed that too.

With that Sam came across the table and pulled me in a light embrace. After that he pulled a chair for me to sit when I sat down he went back to his place and started normal chats.

Sam: So, How's your job going?

Cassie: Good but a lot of pressure.

Sam: Pressure, On you?

Cassie: Yeah! You know my birthday is on coming Monday and I really want to finish this project before Monday.

Sam: Ok, No need to worry. You are smart and very talented. I know you'll be able to figure out all of it in no time.

Cassie: Thanks Sam.

Sam: Happy to help.

Then Sam ordered food. We ate in silence at first and then with small talks that made me forget all of my worries.

After dinner Sam took me to a long drive. After a long romantic drive he pulled in front of a mini park. Fully decorated with lights. It was all breathtaking. When I pulled my eyes away from the scenery I found Sam, down on one knee with a ring in his hands.

Sam: Cassie, My love. Will you marry me?

Cassie: Oh my God Sam! I can't believe it. Are you.... Is it Am I dreaming?

Sam: No my love. It's as real as the blood in your veins and the beating heart in your chest.

Cassie: But you said you're not ready for any kind of commitment or anything yet!

Sam: Well now I think I am. Cassie will you please answer my question? You're embarrassing me in front of everyone.

Cassie: Everyone! You again told the press, didn't you?

Sam: Well it will help me you know.

Cassie: Sam! Really?

Sam: Ok I'm sorry.

Cassie: How many of them are around?

Sam: I don't know.

Cassie: SAM!!!!

Sam: Okay okay. Four or five magazines, two or three Newspapers and maybe a business channel or two.

Cassie: Are you kidding me?

Sam: I said I'm sorry. Now for how long are you planning to keep me down on one knee?

Cassie: I don't know, I'm kind of admiring the view.

Sam: Cassie!!!!

Cassie: Well!!!!....

CHAPTER 2

Cassie: Oh Sam you're adorable when angry. Of course I'll marry you.

Sam: What?

Cassie: Yes! Yes! All the way Yes!

Sam: Oh my God!

With that he slipped the ring in my hand and hugged me tight and I was just enjoying his embrace. I rested my head on his chest, his heart beat made me feel relaxed. In this moment I forgot everything in this world. It was only him and his calm heartbeat and the rest of the world just melted away.

Cassie: Oh God! It's half past midnight.

Sam: What! God! I should be running. I have a flight in an hour.

Cassie: What? No. First you're dropping me at Iris' house. It's late Sam.

Sam: Baby. I would have done that if I wouldn't have flight.

I sighed and nodded in understanding.

Cassie: At least wait until the cab's here.

Sam: Of course babe! I'm not selfish, you know.

Cassie: Sam!!!

Sam: Ok. Just sit with me and I will call a cab for you.

Cassie: Okay.

In 10 minutes the cab reached the spot. Sam kissed my cheek as good bye and I climbed into the cab. By the time I reached Hunt's house, everyone was asleep. So I quickly got to Iris' room to change my clothes. I slipped in normal wear jeans and black T-shirt. After I had changed my clothes I headed straight to Iris' lab. As I started my work I felt a shadow behind me. I almost screamed my lungs out when Chris put his hand on my mouth to block my scream.

Chris: It's me Candy. Don't be scared.

With that he let go.

Cassie: Chris what the hell?

Chris: What? I thought you would need some coffee while I was making one for myself.

Cassie: Why are you still up Chris? It's late.

Chris: I was working.

Cassie: Really. I thought you keep personal and professional apart?

Chris: Okay fine. I don't have to answer every question you ask. By the way you're welcome.

Cassie: What? Oh yeah! Thanks.

Chris simply just smiled. A moment later he asked.

Chris: How did you get home?

Cassie: umm! By cab.

Chris: What? Didn't I tell you to call me? Why didn't Sam drive you back?

Cassie: Calm down Chris. Sam had a flight. He couldn't...

Chris: Then why didn't you call me?

Cassie: Well I couldn't just call you to just pick me up. I'm a grown up and I can take care of myself.

Chris: I don't give a damn. When I told you to call me why didn't you?

Cassie: Chris, please! You act like that every time I drive back home myself or take a cab this late. I just don't understand why?

Chris: Well I just wish my fears will never come true. Because you literally don't care for what I say.

With that Chris jolted out of the lab leaving me wondering. Why does he behave like that? It's like a repeat episode every time I'm driving alone late. I put my thoughts aside and got myself back to work. It was a few hours I guessed. I haven't even looked at the clock. I was busy. I heard someone coming. I thought it would be Chris, probably back for another lecture of his. When I looked back, it was Stella, Chris' mother.

Stella: Oh my God Cassie honey! Don't tell me you were up all night for your work.

Cassie: Oh! Is it morning already?

Stella: Morning already? You must be joking? It's 9am. Tell me you are not here since you came back last night? When were you home last night?

Cassie: Probably at 2am.

Stella: My God! You're a mess Cassie. Look at yourself. Did you even stretch yourself?

Cassie: Well.....

Stella: Oh my God. That's it. Wrap it up and go to bed right now. And I won't repeat myself.

Cassie: I'll just complete it in no time then I will be in bed. I promise.

Stella: No. Wrap it up. I want you in bed right now.

Stella grabbed me by my arm to drag me out of the lab.

Cassie: Stella let me just.....

Stella: No young lady. Go to bed.

Just then the alarm went on and I turned in excitement.

Cassie:OH. MY. GOD! Oh my God! Oh my God....

Stella: What is this? Turn it off Cassie.

I turned it off.

Stella: What was that?

Cassie: That's the security program I've been designing for months. Things were just falling apart Every Time but last night I think it all worked. Oh my God.... Please just tell me Mr Hunt is not home?

Stella: Lucky for you. He left after breakfast to meet his friends.

Cassie: Oh. Thank God! I almost thought he would be upstairs. God. IT WORKED. It actually worked.

Stella: Is it fully ready to show Liam?

Cassie: No. It's the Beta form and it worked. The Alpha is almost ready. I think I'll be done working by tomorrow.

Stella: So, how are you feeling about it?

Cassie:I can't tell you Stella how happy I am. I can't believe it. I DID IT. I just did it.

Stella:I'm happy for you as well honey. Now if you don't want to see me angry, then get yourself upstairs. Eat, shaver and go to bed right now.

Cassie: Yes ma'am. On it.

Stella: What would you like to have honey?

Cassie: Egg roll...

Stella: Forget I ask. Just wrap it up NOW.

Cassie: Okay, Okay.

By the time I got upstairs. The delicious aroma of egg rolls made my mouth water and my stomach growled out loud and Chris started laughing hard.

Cassie: What's so funny?

Chris: YOU! You're funny Cassie.

Cassie: God. Just get out. Let me eat in peace.

Chris: Haha! Sure, but I'll never forget the sound your stomach just made.

Cassie: That's so embarrassing.

Chris just laughed, waking away. He stopped at the door and turned around.

Cassie: Now what?

Chris: Congratulations.

Cassie: What? How did you....

Chris: I know Candy. I always know.

With that he walked out of the kitchen leaving me behind in shock. How the hell did he know?

How he always knows. Just then I spot Stella coming in.

Stella: Cassie! What's that on your hand?

Cassie: Oh this?

I showed her my ring.

Stella: Yes this!

Cassie: This is my engagement ring.

Stella: Seriously.

Cassie: Oh yeah. Sammy proposed to me last night and I said yes. You're the first person who knows. Well till Monday. After that the whole world will know.

Stella: Oh my God honey. I'm so happy for you.

Cassie: Thanks. It means a lot to me you know.

Chris came back to the kitchen for some water.

Stella: Chris, Cassie is engaged now.

Chris: Yeah I know Mom.

Stella: Cassie you said I'm the first one who knows. How does he know then?

Stella's phone rang and she walked out of the kitchen.

Cassie: Now how did you know about this?

Chris: Didn't I congratulate you?

Cassie: Oh! I thought it was for something else.

Chris: Oh. It was for both.

Cassie: What? How the hell did you just know Chris?

Chris: It's a secret Candy!

I just smiled at his reply. Chris has called me Candy since the first time we met at Iris' 18th birthday. I don't know and never even asked why he calls me that.

Just then Stella snapped me out of my thoughts.

Stella: You're still here?

Cassie: Yeah. I'm just finishing.

Stella: Good and after that I don't wanna see your pretty face here.

Cassie: Okay. I'm going.

After finishing my breakfast, I went to Iris' room. She just stepped out of the bathroom. She was shocked seeing me there.

Iris: I thought you didn't come and went home last night?

Cassie: No. I was in the lab.

Iris: The whole night?

Cassie: Yep.

Iris: You're crazy.

Cassie: You think. By the way, your father came back home last night.

Iris: What? Last night?

Cassie: Yep.

Iris: Who told you?

Cassie: Nobody. I saw his car parked last night when I came home. Plus, Stella just told me he left to meet his friend after breakfast.

Iris: Oh man. I didn't know.

Cassie: Tell me something new.

Iris: Shut up and go.

After a long hot bath, I came out of the bathroom. All my tense muscles were relaxed. I climbed in bed. The moment my head hit the pillow and I closed my eyes. I fell asleep.

When I woke up again. The room was dark. I turned on the lamp to look around. I looked for my phone to know the time. It was 8pm. Just then the door swung open and Iris came in.

Iris: Why am I always the last one to know things about you? I mean I'm the only best friend you have.

Cassie: I didn't tell anyone they just noticed.

Iris: God I'm so happy for you. When did it happen?

Cassie: Last night. After dinner.

Iris: We need to celebrate.

Cassie: Celebrate how?

Iris: Just get up and get ready. The dinner is ready. After dinner we can go to the club.

Cassie: Okay

Iris: Then move your butt.

Cassie: Okay fine.

Iris: And wear something pink and short.

Cassie: Why?

Iris: Don't ask. Just do as I say.

Cassie: Fine.

After dinner we were heading out when we saw Chris in his car. We walked towards his car and I asked.

Cassie: Where have you been?

Chris: I needed some air.

He looked at me up and down.

Chris: You look good. What's the occasion?

Iris: You know the occasion and we're celebrating.

Chris smiled at me and my cheeks turned pink.

Cassie: Why don't you come with us?

Iris' eyes lightened up.

Chris: What will I do there?

Cassie: Well you know what we all do. Dance, have fun.

Chris: Okay fine. I'll drive.

Cassie: Fine.

A long drive later. We reached our usual spot. We all exited the car. Chris led us both in.

In a bit Iris walked towards the dance floor. Leaving me and Chris alone.

Cassie: What happened now?

Chris: What?

Cassie: You said you needed air. What happened?

Chris: You know what could have happened.

Cassie: School?

Chris: Yeah. School.

Cassie: I'm so sorry Chris.

Chris: It's Okay. You get habitual, when it happens almost everyday.

Cassie: Your Dad?

Chris: Yeah. He was just pissed at me because I have no interest in our family business. I don't know why they are still pushing me. I mean Iris has potential to take over it. She's smart, she's talented, also clever. She would become a great CEO.

I put my hand on his and gave it a little squeeze.

Cassie: As you said, give it some time.

Chris: Yeah. I know. Thanks Cassie for listening. It feels good to know you have a good listener. It helps a lot.

Cassie: Yeah. I know and no need to thank me Chris. You do the same for me.

Chris: You don't owe me Cassie.

Cassie: I know, and I also haven't done any favors for you as well.

Chris: Yeah?

Cassie: Yep.

Chris: Wanna dance?

Cassie: What? With you?

Chris: No. With that grandpa over there. Of course with me Cassie.

Cassie: Okay.

Then he lead me to the dance floor. He was good at it. I wondered where did he learned to dance that good. When the night ended, I didn't know. Next morning when I woke up I went straight for shower. I dressed up and walk out of the room. Iris was still asleep. I went back to the lab to finish up my work. Just then Chris called out my name.

Chris: Cassie, you here?

Cassie: Yes.

Chris: Come up. I made breakfast.

Cassie: Okay coming.

I joined Chris for breakfast. We talked and laughed and ate together. Nobody was up. It was only 6 in the morning.

CHAPTER 3

After a joyful and fun-filled breakfast, I went back to my work. After hours of hard work I was finally able to complete my work. I was just wrapping up, as Iris came in.

Iris: So, are you done?

Cassie: Yep. Don't tell me you are in the mood to celebrate again?

Iris: Well, maybe

Cassie: Just go with Scott, I have to go home. I need to get ready for tomorrow.

Iris: Fine. By the way what is your plan?

Cassie: To surprise your father.

Iris: How?

Cassie: Let's see.

Iris and I went back up to the ground floor. Chris was sipping his coffee. We sat with him on the couch.

Chris: What's the plan?

Cassie: I don't know. Still thinking.

Iris: I'm going out.

Cassie: Oh. Let me gather my stuff.

Iris: Baby. I am going in a totally different way. I have a date with Scott.

Chris: Don't worry. I'll drop her.

Iris: Chris you're a lifesaver.

Chris: I know I know.

In a few minutes Chris and I were on the way to my place.

Chris: How about you surprise Dad?

Cassie: That's what I am thinking. But how?

Chris: Easy. We can set the system in his office before he arrives.

Cassie: Well that's an amazing idea.

Chris: See problem solved.

Cassie: Yeah. Thanks.

We reached my apartment, said our goodbyes. When I opened my door. I was surprised by my sister and brother-in-law.

Katy: Surprise....

Cassie: Oh my God. Katy. Jack.

Jack: How are you Cassie?

Cassie: I am fine.

Katy: We came for your birthday.

Cassie: Oh God. I love you guys. How's Mom and Dad?

Katy: They're good. Having fun. Just busy so they couldn't come.

Cassie: Well at least you guys are here.

My phone pinged and I looked at the screen. It was Chris.

Chris: "If you need anything Candy for tomorrow. Just give me a call".

Cassie: "Okay. I will. Thanks".

Chris: "No need to thank me Candy. Happy to help".

I put my phone on the kitchen counter and started cooking dinner for my family. I was so happy they came. We had dinner together. After dinner and cleaning, my sister and her husband went to their room and I went for mine. I was excited for my birthday. Not because it was my birthday, but because I was about to launch my best. My phone pinged. It was midnight.

Chris: "Happy birthday Candy".

I smiled then my phone started to ring. It was Sam.

Sam: " Hey babe. Happy birthday".

Cassie: "Thanks."

Sam:"What are you doing?"

Cassie:"Thinking."

Sam:" About"?

Cassie:"My project. It's done Sam."

Sam:"Congratulations baby."

Cassie:"Thanks. What are you doing?"

Sam:"Planning."

Cassie:"What? Our wedding?"

Sam:"What? No. I'm not gonna rush for the wedding. I'm not ready now. I was planning new projects for my firm."

Cassie:" Oh. Okay. So you won't be with me tomorrow?"

Sam:"No baby. I'm sorry but your dinner and gifts are due."

Cassie:"Awww. You're too cute."

Sam:"Thanks and I love you too".

Sam hung up and I put my phone on the nightstand and drifted off to sleep.

Next morning I woke up early. Packed my stuff and went to my car. But when you're too happy. Something bad happened .

My car refused to start. I was about to call a cab when I heard a horn.

Chris: Missed me Candy?

Cassie: Chris you're a lifesaver.

Chris: Come on. We have to be there before dad.

Cassie: Yeah.

I climbed in the car. He handed me a small box.

Cassie: Chris. What's this?

Chris: That's for you. Happy birthday.

Cassie: Thank you.

I opened the box and gasped at the beautiful blue pendant in it.

Cassie: Oh my God Chris. It's beautiful.

Chris: Well an older woman was selling it. She claimed it's a lucky charm. So I bought it for you.

Cassie: God. Thank you Chris.

Chris: Never lose it.

Cassie: Are you kidding?

We reached the office. Iris was already there. We set everything up before Mr Hunt got to the office. Security guard called Chris and he said,

Chris: Dad's here.

We finished with the final touches and hid behind the wall. As Mr Hunt came into his office. Alarm turned on and Mr Hunt turned to look for the source.

Liam Hunt: What is this?

Cassie, Chris, Iris together screamed together: SURPRISE.

Liam Hunt: Oh you kids. What is this?

I turned the system off and told Mr Hunt.

Cassie: It's the security program I was designing. It's ready now. So I thought a surprise for you would be great.

Liam Hunt: Really. Congratulations Cassie and happy birthday.

Cassie: Thank you Mr Hunt.

Liam Hunt: So you think you are the only one who can surprise everyone?

Cassie: What do you mean?

Liam Hunt: Well I have thrown a party tonight. Why? It's a surprise.

Cassie: What surprise?

Liam Hunt: You'll know. You've got the invitation. Time and location are on it. Be there smarty.

Cassie: I hate surprises. Fine.

Rest of the day flew by in a blink of an eye at work. Then party time came. I dressed up and got to the party. It was really fancy. I was wondering what made Mr Hunt throw a big party like that for me. Mr Hunt and his family never made me feel that I'm not family. Somehow in 8 years, I became part of their family. But still it wasn't a birthday party.

Cassie: WOW.....

Liam Hunt: Surprised already Cassie?

Cassie: You must be kidding Mr Hunt. It's wonderful but for what?

Liam Hunt: You'll know. Till then. Go and have fun. Iris is over there with Mr Lu.

Cassie: Thanks.

Iris: There you are. You're late.

Cassie: No. You just came before me.

Iris: Fair enough.

Cassie: Hey Scott.

Scott: Hey. Congratulations. For your engagement, your success and your birthday.

Cassie: Thank you. Thank you and thank you Scott. How are you?

Scott: Well I'm alive.

Cassie: I feel sorry for you.

Scott: Thanks.

Iris: Hey.....

Chris: There is the star lady.

Cassie: Somebody's looking hot.

Chris: Says the lady who has brightened up the night.

I blushed and looked away.

Chris: Ha ha.... You're blushing Candy.

Iris: Why do you call her Candy?

Chris: It's a secret.

Iris: You and your secrets.

Just then Mr Hunt spoke on the microphone.

Liam Hunt: Good evening ladies and gentlemen and welcome. Me and my wife are so grateful to each one of you to be part of this party tonight. As everyone is eager to know why we have thrown this big party tonight. Well we're not going to make you wait anymore. But first we would like to call our kids, Chris and Iris Hunt on the stage with the lady of the night Cassandra Wolf.

Chris and Iris together spoke: Thank you dad.

Cassie: Thank you Mr Hunt.

Liam Hunt: Now that everyone is here time to break the biggest news of the month.

Everyone was waiting for the news.

Liam Hunt: Well the news is our very own Cassie has now been nominated for the title of the best software designer of the year.

Everyone cheered as I was in shock that maybe I heard something wrong.

Cassie: What? Me? Am I dreaming or something?

Stella: No, it's not a dream, also not a joke, we can't prank you in front of all these people honey. Congratulations.

I started crying.

Stella: Oh honey.

She hugged me, held me like a mother. Whenever I needed a family. They are always there.

Cassie: I can't believe it.

Stella: Well believe it honey and you deserve it.

Everyone was congratulating me. I was so happy. Just then I got voicemail by Sam.

Sam: " Hey babe. Guess what. As you wished. I'm now planning our wedding. When I'll come back. We'll discuss the details. Love you. Miss you."

I was surprised because just last night he said he's not ready and now a sudden change made me suspicious.

Iris: Dad when did that happen?

Liam Hunt: Thursday morning, I received the call.

Iris grabbed me by the arm to drag me to a silent corner.

Iris: I knew it.

Cassie: What?

Iris: Your fame starved fiancée. He did it because he knew you're nominated. I was thinking, how in hell he actually had proposed you.

Cassie: Come on Iris.

Iris: No seriously. And I know in a few days he'll ask you for a wedding. If you'll get the award, what I'm sure you will and.... Wait. Why are you making that face?

Cassie: Well He just..... I got his voicemail. He's planning our wedding.

Iris: Did you tell him your program is done?

Cassie: Yes.

Iris: That brat.

Cassie: Forget it come on.

Rest of the night smoothly. We had a lot of fun.

Cassie: Oh God. It's midnight. I better run.

Iris: Wait for Chris. He'll kill me.

Cassie: No. I'm going bye.

Iris: Cassie, wait.

Cassie: It will take him an hour and we have work tomorrow.

Iris: Just be careful.

Cassie: Don't worry.

I climbed into my car. Rest of the way, I was thinking about the conversation I had with Iris. At some point, I was agreeing with her. Then my phone rang.

Chris: "Where are you?"

Cassie:" Slowdown Chris. I'm on my way home."

Chris:" Why didn't you wait for me ?"

Cassie:" Chris. I'm fine. I'm almost home."

Chris:" Cassie I told you not to leave."

Cassie:" Chris I'm fine and I Oh my God.... Shit."

Chris: "Cassie.... Cassie..... What happened? Where are you?"

Cassie:" Chris. I'm hit. I am Mmmmmmm....."

Man: it's okay sweetie. Go to sleep.

Chris:"Cassie."

My head starts spinning. My vision got blurred and then all I saw was dark.

CHAPTER 4

When I opened my eyes again, my whole world was different. I was in a torture room. My hands and my legs were tied with a chair.

I was scared, shivering by the sudden change in my life. I was crying and looking around when a man came in.

Man: You're awake. Good. Now we can talk. First, yes you're kidnapped and you're on our mercy.

Cassie: What do you want? I haven't done anything to anyone.

Man: Sweetie. You think bad things happen to bad people. No. It happens to people like you who ain't do anything to hurt other people.

Cassie: You need money or something, you can have it. Please let me go.

Man: We need you to give us your new program with some inside information of the Hunt Tecs.

Cassie: I don't understand. How could I know the inside information of the Hunt Tecs?

He grabbed a fistful of my hair and arched my neck forcefully to a painful point.

Man: Listen up smarty ass. The whole world knows you're the only person who's involved with Hunts in a way no one's involved. Not even their friends. Now you have only two options. Give up the information and we'll let you go or keep your mouth shut and we'll make your life hell like you've never even imagined in your worst nightmare. Meg.

Meg: Yes boss.

Man: Feed her something. I want her to live.

Meg: Okay boss.

In a few minutes Meg came back with a tray. He put the tray Down and unknotted all the ropes.

Meg: Eat or I will make you.

I did as he said. When I was done he took the tray and locked me in the torture room. I was crying and thinking who and why would want to hurt me or worst, to Hunts. I was crying and praying to God that before they'll come back, the police will find me.

I was still asleep when I heard some noise. I opened my eyes when three men came in and shut the door behind.

Man: So have you decided what you want? Life with peace or you want to wish for your death.

Cassie: Do whatever you can. You can't scare me with your shit.

Man: Is that so.

They put something on my neck and I screamed. It was an iron rod, heated enough that it was glowing red.

Man: How was that?

Cassie: I won't give a fu'king word.

Man: Rock. Nelson.

Rock & Nelson: Yes boss.

Man: Give her an intro to nightmare.

Rock & Nelson: Yes boss.

They grabbed me by my arms, put me on the torture table. Cuffed my hands and legs tight and secured two wires on either side of my neck with some tape. I wasn't sure what was that until they turned it on and I felt my worst nightmare. They were giving me electric shocks not high enough to kill me but enough to make me scream out loud. I didn't know for how much longer they kept torturing me until I heard their leader.

Man: Stop.

He came near me. I was panting and my whole body was shaking.

Man: Are you ready or you want more?

I didn't say a single word but spat on his face.

Cassie: Go to hell.

Instead of getting angry he smirked.

Man: You think I would care if you spit on my face.

He grabbed a fistful of my hair.

Man: Welcome to hell sweetie.

With that he left and the other two kept torturing me until I fainted.

When I opened my eyes again I was on the ground. My whole body was aching. The point on my neck where they put wires were swelled. I tried to get up but the pain was too much for me. Still I

gathered everything I had to push myself off of the ground. I was locked inside so I went back to sit down on the ground, hugged my knees and prayed to God help me anyway, just help me because at some point I knew this was just the start of what they called a nightmare.

The door shoot opened and two men came in. One was the leader and the other was someone I haven't seen.

Man: I was getting worried Rock and Nelson had killed you. You were out cold for 2 days. Andy.

Andy: Yes boss.

Man: Feed her, do everything you have to do to get her back on her feet.

Andy: Yes boss.

Andy came back with a tray full of fruits.

Andy: Eat it and do it fast.

I ate it, tears flowing. As I finished he took the tray and excited the room locking me behind. I laid down on the ground and drifted off to sleep.

"8 years ago"

Cassie: (oh my God almost everyone running out of the office crying how am I going to get a chance)

Girl: Hey, can we talk?

I looked at the girl sitting beside me.

Girl: Don't take it the wrong way but it calmed my nerves.

Cassie: OH okay.

Girl: Job?

Cassie: Internship and you?

Girl: Well the same but I have plans to continue.

Cassie: That's good.

Girl: What's your specialty?

Cassie: Softwares.

Girl: Lucky you.

Cassie: Lucky? I can see all of them coming out crying.

Girl: Yeah I can see that too but you have a chance.

Cassie: How?

Girl: Well I've heard they need a junior in the software department.

Cassie: Yeah, How do you know?

Girl: Let's just say, I keep my eyes around.

Cassie: Thanks. It really helped.

Girl: What's your name?

Cassie:. Cassandra Wolf. You can call me Cassie.

Girl:. Nice name Cassie.

Cassie:. Thanks, what's yours?

Girl:. Iris Hunt.

Cassie:. Iris Hunt. Mr Hunt's Only daughter?

Iris:. Yes that's me.

Cassie:. Then why are you nervous?

Iris:. Oh my father clearly said " I'm not your father in Hunt's Techs. Your father won't be taking your interview. It will be a man who put his whole life in that damn business. Don't think for a second I wouldn't throw you out of the building."

Cassie:. Wow that's something.

Iris:. Yeah Pretty lame right.

Cassie:. Now I know why you are nervous.

Iris:. Hey you think you can give me your number?

Cassie:. Yeah sure.

I gave her my number and she gave me hers. A woman came out of the office and called her name.

Woman:. Iris Hunt.

Iris:. That's my cue. Hey promise me even if I wouldn't get the job. We will be friends. You are the very first person who didn't judge me by my name and fame.

Cassie:. Sure thing same thing. The difference is you didn't judge me as a techno creep.

Iris:. You kidding? I think you're cool.

Cassie:. Thanks and good luck.

Iris:. Thanks. I need it.

" Back in time"

Man:. Wake up.

I opened up my eyes to see it was only a dream.

Man:. Ready to talk?

Cassie:. Break all of my bones but I won't say a word.

Man:. As you say lovely. Bring it in.

It was a glass aquarium with worms.

Man:. I brought a special one, just for you.

Cassie:. No.

Man:. Put her in.

Nelson and Meg grabbed me and put me in but didn't let go.

Cassie:. No. Get me out. No.

I was crying but they didn't let me go.

Man:. Tell us and you're free to go.

I glared at him. Something just went off in me. I freed my hand by Meg. Took a bunch of worms in my hand, put it in my mouth and started chewing it. Worms were like one of my worst nightmares but even I was shocked I could do that but I did it. I chewed them like spaghetti and swallowed. Meg ran out of the room while Nelson threw up. The other man, their leader, was just smiling looking at me.

Man:. You are one of the fighters I see. I am going to enjoy it.

Cassie:. Try your best shot.

Man:. Oh I will.

Rock and Andy came in to drag the aquarium out of the room and lock it after putting a tray full of food in the room. Just as they left I fingered my throat hard enough that it took me a few seconds to throw up. After puking I was relieved that at least there are no worms in my stomach. I ate the food and drifted off to sleep.

Next when I opened my eyes I was still alone in the room there was a tray of food but else nobody. I enjoyed my breakfast. I didn't really know my breakfast or lunch or dinner. I knew if I want to survive in a place like this then I have to be strong. My father taught me well because my father is an FBI agent and I was one child who was planning to live in New York not in Vegas with my family. So he taught me to survive in hell like this. The door opened again and I braced myself for another torture session.

Man:. Ready for today's surprise?

I smirked at his question.

Cassie:. Why? Are you getting tired?

He slapped me.

Man:. You are getting stubborn. Let me teach you a lesson. Lesson that your father should have taught you in the first place.

Cassie:. MY father taught me well. He taught me how to survive in hell like this and he also told me how to handle assholes like you.

Man:. Oh really! What does your father do exactly?

Cassie:. He's an FBI agent.

He shouted.

Man:. What?

Cassie:. You heard me. He is an FBI agent and you know what the FBI is capable of.

Man:. You're lying. Just to delay today's torture.

Cassie:. Don't believe me? Just go and search agent David Wolf and also check if he is in New York.

He smirked.

Man:. Even if he is in New York city. He won't get to you that easily. You are somewhere, where even your God can't hear your prayers.

Cassie:. Just bring it on.

Time passed like this days, weeks, maybe even months. I lost the count. I was getting chilly. I knew it's winter. It must be snowing outside. I love snow and I never missed the snowy season but this year I couldn't because I was locked every time. I go to sleep. I pray that next time I opened my eyes I'll be out of this hell.

"8 years ago Iris 18th birthday"

Cassie:. Wow. That's something fancy.

Man:. Pardon me but who are you?

Cassie:. I'm Cassandra Wolf. Iris' friend.

Man:. Iris' friend. She ain't called her friends on her birthday parties.

Cassie:. She did invite me.

Iris:. God I thought you won't come.

Cassie:. You invited me. Why wouldn't I?

Iris hugged me.

Iris:. Meet my boring brother Christopher Hunt. Chris, meet Cassie. She's my friend.

Chris:. Pleasure to meet you.

Cassie:. Thank you.

Chris:. I thought people greet back as nice to meet you too or me too.

Cassie:. Yeah. But not for you.

Chris:. Why?

Me:. Because I didn't get any pleasure meeting you.

Chris tapped the tip of my nose with his index finger.

Chris:. You're one sweet and sour. Aren't you Candy?

" Back in time"

Man:. Wake the fu*k up.

And again it was a dream.

Man:. Ready for today's treatment?

Cassie:. Are you tired?

Nelson came into the room and whispered something and his boss' ear. He quickly got up and everyone left the room immediately. I could hear some voices so I got to the door and pressed my ear to the door to have a little clear voice. There were only two voices I could hear. One belonged to the man. The leader of the kidnappers and the other one I couldn't recognize.

Man 1:. She is too impossible to break. We've tried everything.

Man 2:. You haven't tried enough.

Man 1:. Are you bluffing? We're torturing her, giving her hell but she still refuses to break.

Man 2:. You're useless. You all are. I paid you millions for just one job and you couldn't do that either.

Man 1:. She's trained to resist it all.

Man 2:. You can't do a thing. Open the door.

Man 1:. She'll know about you.

Man 2:. I said open the fuc*king door.

I quickly got back to my place and sat down on the floor. The door shoot opened and a man in the tux came in. I was shocked when I looked at him. Because I knew who he was, Hendrick Black. The only son of the billionaire Richard Black and the CEO of our rival company, Black Enterprises.

Hendrick Black: As I've heard. You're a pure beauty.

Hendrick said as he stroked my cheek with his fingers.

Cassie: Keep your hands to yourself Hendrick. I used to respect you for all the things you've achieved. But now I only think that you're nothing but a cheap bastard, who uses his power to do wrong. Tell me, is it about the award or the program I've newly invented.

He grabbed a fistful of my hair.

Hendrick Black: You know nothing about me. Don't worry baby. I'll tell you what kind of demon I really am. JO

Jo: Yes.

Hendrick Black: I'm staying. She needs lessons by her demon.

Jo: Nelson...

Nelson:Yes boss.

Jo: Get a room ready for Mr Black.

Nelson: Yes boss.

CHAPTER 5

After Hendrik is in the picture, they changed my room. I was still locked But in a room. I could see days and nights, changing after months. I saw the moon and I couldn't wait to see the sunlight but still couldn't tell why all of the sudden change? And why a person like Jo was obeying a person like Hendrik Black. Yeah I've heard a lot about him that he is the man who shows No Mercy to anyone and also that he was a womanizer. Why was Jo afraid of Hendrik Black? It was midnight. I slipped in the bed and closed my eyes and I drifted off sleep. I heard heavy footsteps approaching. I quickly got up and the door shook opened. It was Hendrik Black. Slowly approached my bed.

Cassie: What do you want?

Hendrik Black: You think you're here on a vacation? I'll tell you what is hell.

Cassie: What do you think they all haven't tried? I know how to handle a bastard like you.

Hendrik Black: I bet I'll change your mind. Boys.

Rock and Andy: Yes sir.

Hendrik Black: Tie her down.

Rock and Andy did as he said they tied me to the bed I was glaring at Hendrik Black.

Hendrik Black: Now out.

They both got out and Hendrik sat on the edge of the bed.

Hendrik Black: You're hell of a pretty face.

He said as he stroked his fingers on my cheek.

Cassie: Get your hands off of me.

Hendrik Black: Attitude as well. I bet no one had seen you naked ever.

Cassie: Fu*k you.

Hendrik Black: I will be glad to do it for you, pretty face.

He stood up and started stripping his clothes off.

Cassie: What are you doing?

Hendrik Black: You'll know.

He stripped his clothes until he was in his boxers.

Hendrik Black: Let's have a little fun.

Cassie: No. Stay away from me.

Hendrik Black: You're gonna enjoy it. I can assure you.

Cassie: No. Don't. Please. I'm a virgin.

Hendrik Black: Virgin. I'm gonna enjoy it more. I've never done it with a virgin.

Cassie: No. Please don't. I beg you. Please

He didn't hear a word. He ripped my clothes off of my body. I cried, screamed, he didn't listen to me. He raped me brutally, mercilessly. By the time he was done, my body was aching. I saw blood on the sheets. I couldn't take the pain and seeing myself bleeding, it was too much. Room started to spin and the darkness engulfed me.

When I woke up again, Hendrik was sitting on the bed.

Hendrik Black: Good evening. I thought you'd die the first time. You woke up after eighteen hours. Yet still looking beautiful.

Cassie: You raped me.

I said in an angry tone, my voice cracked at the word "raped" but he didn't seem to care. He was smiling so proudly like he had achieved something.

Hendrik Black: Hmm. And you enjoyed it too. Your body reacted to me amazingly. You know there is something about you. I've never looked at a woman twice but you. I can't have enough of you. How about round two?

Cassie: No. Let me go.

Hendrik Black: It's just getting started honey. Give up and stop fighting or else, even I don't know what will happen to you.

Cassie: You think I'm a fool. I give you what you want and I'm dead.

Hendrik Black: Yet, It's gonna take a few more rounds to break you. You have no idea what I really want.

He did it again. I was begging him to stop but he was enjoining all my pain and screams. He left the room when he was done. Even in So much pain I drifted off sleep or maybe I fainted again. I don't know.

I heard some noises when I woke up. My whole body was aching. I heard some arguments.

Jo: You're a monster. She was a virgin.

Hendrik Black: Well, Not any more.

Jo: Her father is a fu*king FBI.

Hendrik Black: So?

Jo: So, If he knew you raped her. He's Gonna chop your pretty ass.

Hendrik Black: And who's gonna tell him? You?

Jo: They will find her.

Hendrik Black: It wouldn't have happened if you've gotten what I've asked you.

Jo: Like you've achieved it.

Hendrik Black: A few more times and she'll give up. After all, how much more can a woman bear? She'll give up soon, and then...

Jo: And then what?

Hendrick Black: That's none of your business. Keep your concerns for what you are paid for.

Jo: And if she did not then what?

Hendrik Black: Then she'll keep having it until she dies.

Jo: We're not killing her. We've never killed anyone.

Hendrik Black: Who is saying you will. She'll die because of her own stubbornness.

Jo: You're making a big mistake.

Hendrik Black: Don't you dare tell me what I have to do and what not. Go and feed her. I want her to be ready when I get back.

I was scared and I knew he hadn't had enough. He'll come back. For the first time in my life I was scared. All I was thinking, if I had listened to Chris. I wouldn't be here. The door opened and Jo came in with food.

Jo: Eat.

Cassie: Please. I beg you. Let me go. He's a monster.

Jo: I said eat.

Cassie: I'll die but won't eat.

Jo: You think he'll let you die that easily. He's just getting started. Give him what he wants.

Cassie: NEVER.

Jo: Do you have any idea what kind of monster he is.

Cassie: You think I still don't know? He raped me twice and you still think I don't know what kind of monster he really is.

Jo: Do whatever you want.

He got out of the room. I was alone and I was scared. But still I couldn't betray Hunts. I was praying to God to get me out of here. But I started to think that Jo was right. Even God couldn't hear me here. I was tired, weak but I wasn't going to give up. I made myself a promise. Either he let me go or I died. There was no way that I could give him what he was asking for. I knew at some point. No one's gonna come and rescue me. So I was ready to die. Door opened again, but this time I wasn't scared.

Hendrik Black: Ready to give up or you still have strength to bear me more.

Cassie: I'll die but won't speak a word.

Hendrik Black: You're starting to annoy me.

Cassie: As I said, I'll die but won't speak a word. You're a monster Hendrik Black. There was a time I used to admire your hard work, idealized you. But not anymore. Everyone was right about you. You're a monster but I won't give up. I'm not scared of you. Not anymore. You've already ruined me. What else could you take from me?

He chuckled darkly.

Hendrik Black: When I said I was just getting started, I wasn't bluffing. And you don't know, but you're already mine.

Jo's POV:-

The door closed and all we could hear were that monster's loud moans. It was like she already died. Not a single voice of hers we heard.

Andy: This wasn't the plan boss. We didn't agree to this.

Jo: Don't tell me what to do.

Andy: Don't forget you have a daughter as well. We all have girls and women in our houses, boss.

Nelson: He's right and I don't want them to be cursed because of me. I quit.

Jo: What?

Nelson: You heard me boss. I quit.

With that Nelson left and everyone was looking at me whether I'll speak or not. The truth was I wasn't able to speak anymore. Her pleading eyes were drilling holes in my heart and my brain. But I couldn't do anything. I was too afraid of getting caught.

Christopher's POV:-

Chris: Have you got anything?

Scott: We're doing our best.

Chris: It's been 8 months Scott. We need to find her. We don't know what they're doing to her. Hell, we don't even know if she's alive or not.

Scott: Think positive. She's a fighter. I know she's OKAY. She will fight her way out.

Chris: Yeah, I know that too but being alone with animals. I don't know how she would be.

Scott: Believe it Chris. I'm as worried as you are. She is a good person and a kind friend. I'm working on it personally. All I want for her is to be back home safely.

Chris: Yeah thank you.

Scott: Did you notice something?

Chris: What?

Scott: There is a person, out of scene.

Chris: Sam Peterson?

Scott: Yes. I mean Iris told me that Cassie received a voice mail from him at the party, saying he's planning their wedding. And all of a sudden he's out of picture. That doesn't make any sense.

Chris: Just don't point that out for Iris. She already hates him.

Scott: OKAY. Whatever you say.

Agent Wolf: What's the status?

Scott: We're still working on all the info and the evidence we have.

Agent Wolf: And what are those?

Scott: Her wrecked car, her cell phone, a few more belongings such as her clothes and a blue pendant.

Chris: Blue pendant?

Scott: The one you gifted her on her birthday. We just found it today. I don't know how but I guess God is helping us to find her.

Agent Wolf: Mr Hunt. Did you or anyone get any text or call or something by Mr Peterson?

Chris: No. Actually we were discussing that he is totally out of the picture.

Agent Wolf: Any idea why?

Scott: We're not certain. He's kind of a guy who stays away from trouble.

Agent Wolf: But that's his girlfriend we're talking about.

Scott and I look at each other and back to Cassie's father.

Agent Wolf: Wait. What's that look on both of your pretty faces?

Chris: Cassie didn't tell you anything?

Agent Wolf: Tell me what?

Chris: Mr Wolf, Your daughter is engaged with him and they would have started to plan their wedding if she wouldn't have been kidnapped.

Agent Wolf: She's what?

Chris: It all happened so fast.

Agent Wolf: Why didn't she tell me?

Scott: Well did you ask your other daughter? She's here and she knows.

Agent Wolf: What? she's here? Hell I don't even know Katy's here in New York City. What the hell is going on?

Iris: I'll tell you what's going on. Katy is too busy shopping and wasting Cassie's money, she doesn't even care that her twin sister has been kidnapped for months. She knows everything but why care when she left money behind. And about Sam, everyone knows he's a fame starved beast and we're still keeping it all low profile. I'm sure he'll jump in when he can get some crazy press.

Agent Wolf: I can't believe it.

Iris: You should, after all Katy is all like her mother. Tell me. Mrs Wolf still isn't here, right?

Chris: Iris. That's enough. Go back home.

Iris: I'm going now, but this isn't over.

Chris: Mr Wolf. Are you OKAY?

Agent Wolf: How can I be? My baby is missing. I can't find her. The only people seem to care about her are you, your family and her friends. Her own sister is busy having fun. Her mother cares more about her social life than her missing daughter. How can I be?

Chris: Mr Wolf. You need to be strong.

Scott: Yeah. Cassie's a fighter. I know we still don't know the reason for her kidnapping and we know everything is messy. But I know she'll fight.

Agent Wolf: Who talked with her last?

Chris: I did. She said she's got hit. She was about to say something before someone interrupted. I heard a male voice.

Agent Wolf: And you're the one who called the Police?

Chris: Yes and then Scott and I went searching for her.

Agent Wolf: Who found her car?

Scott: Police did. Police reached the crime scene first.

Agent Wolf: Any ransoms or something?

Chris: No. Not even a single call in 8 months.

Agent Wolf: I know asking the same questions again and again ain't gonna help finding her. But I just feel like I'm missing something.

Scott: Trust us Agent Wolf, we all are feeling the same as you.

Scott and Agent Wolf left and I was thinking about her. What she would be doing? What kind of animals are around her? How hard would it be getting for her to breath? Am I ever gonna see her innocent smile again? Where is she? When will we find her?

CHAPTER 6

----- 8 MONTHS AGO -----

Chris POV:-

Chris: Cassie Cassie.....!

Scott: What is it?

Chris: Cassie's been hit. I heard someone. A man. We need to go.

Iris: I'll come with you.

Scott: No. Stay here. I'm driving Chris.

Chris: Okay. I better call 911

Lady: 911. What's your emergency?

They noted my report, asked for her phone number. I gave them her number and Info then I hung up.

Chris: I hope she's fine.

Scott: Yeah. Me too .

Scott kept driving until we reached the spot and we saw red and blue lights.

Detective: Who are you?

Scott: I'm Agent Scott Lu FBI. This is my friend Mr Hunt. He's the one who called the cops.

Detective: Nice to meet you both. I'm detective Bob Dean.

Scott: What's the status?

Detective Dean: We have searched the whole area.

Chris: Found anyone?

Detective Dean: No sir. Some things but no one else.

Chris: What does that suppose to mean?

Detective Dean: I'm not sure but it looks like she's been kidnapped.

Scott: God. No. I was praying for this not to happen.

Chris: What do you mean?

Scott: The way you were explaining things. I knew that the situation was leading towards this mess.

Chris: If she would've listened to me. This wouldn't have happened.

Scott: Yeah. I know. But they think we consider them weak.

Chris: What do you mean?

Scott: Same about your sister. She thinks I think of her as a weak person.

Detective Dean: It's like they wanted us to know that she's been kidnapped.

Scott: In the area like this we won't find anything more solid enough.

Detective Dean: Maybe a ransom call will help. Or maybe a demand or something.

Scott: Yeah I guess so.

I didn't have any idea Where she would be? How would she be? Was she even alive? I was worried. Next day I went to work but couldn't focus. I was calling Scott from time to time to ask him for updates. They haven't found anything, not even a call for any demand. I was worried to even think, what they would do to her. Something about her. I always cared about her. In a different way. She always makes me smile. I just wish she would have listened to me. I knew she was tough but I also knew beauty with innocence is a curse.

Liam Hunt: Lu was asking if there were any calls or ransom's been made by the kidnappers.

Chris: That's the bad news dad. Nothing. Even Scott is curious.

Iris: About what?

Chris: He said it's been 2 weeks. They should have called if they have kidnapped her for money. He thinks it's something else.

Liam Hunt: What else could it be Chris?

Chris: We don't know yet. I talked to her father. Even he thinks this isn't about money.

Stella: Has anyone told anything to Mr Peterson.

Iris: Mom we've been trying to contact him.

Chris: Iris. Now is not the time.

Iris: Then when will be Chris? I'm starting to feel like he's somehow involved in this whole kidnapping situation.

To be honest, I agree with her too but didn't want to break it to everyone. But I did say it to Scott and his father, Senior Detective Lu. Because they were handling the case.

----- BACK IN TIME -----

Scott: You got time Chris?

Chris: Sure. What is it?

Scott: We've got a man. It's something you wouldn't believe. You have to come with me.

Chris: What man?

Scott: Just come. Agent Wolf will be there too.

After 30 minutes drive. We reached the police station. We walked in a room. Agent Wolf had Just arrived with us.

Agent Wolf: What's so urgent?

Scott: Come on. I'll show you both.

In Interrogation room we saw a guy sitting and cuffed with the table

Chris: What's going on? Who is he?

Scott: He's one of the kidnappers.

Chris and Agent Wolf: What?

Scott: He's one of them. He said he left them 3 weeks ago. She's alive but not well.

Agent Wolf: What do you mean?

Scott: Come we can ask him. He'll explain.

We all went to the Interrogation room.

Scott: Nelson Cal. This is Agent Wolf, senior FBI agent and Cassie's father. And this is Mr Hunt, he's a psychologist.

Nelson: Hi.

Agent Wolf: Where is my daughter?

Nelson: Hear me out I'm here to tell you everything. I will even take you there. Please.

Scott: Agent Wolf! He's our only lead in months. He knows where she is and how she is. Let's just hear what he has to say.

Agent Wolf: Tell us everything. NOW.

Nelson: I worked for Jo Leo. Including me there were 4 guys almost my age, worked for him too. 10 months ago, we got paid millions for a simple job, to kidnap Cassandra Wolf. And also to get some inside information about Hunt's Tech's.

Chris: Who paid the money?

Nelson: Your rivals, Blacks. Hendrick Black.

Chris: What?

Agent Wolf: Why would Hendrick Black do something like that?

Chris: Hendrick Black is a bastard and would do anything to get what he wants.

Nelson: We were told to get the information. A girl, and we were 5 men. We thought she would get scared and give up. We were wrong. She was a fighter. We tried to scare her but she didn't give up, then we tortured her. 8 months of hell and she hadn't said a word. Then three weeks ago, Hendrick Black came to our torture house, to ask us what we have achieved, which was nothing, she was too strong to break. Then he did something and I left because I have sisters too.

Scott: What he did?

Nelson: He raped her.

Chris: He did what?

David lost the ability to speak, he wasn't able to even stand. I hold him, make him sit on a chair. He was breathing heavily. His eyes were red with pain and rage. Tears rolling down.

Nelson: He raped her. She even told him that she's a virgin. But that monster didn't stop and she fainted. She woke up after 18 hours just to go through that pain again. Her screams, her painful sobs. I couldn't take that anymore. One of our guys tried to wake our boss, but he did nothing. So I left. But in these three weeks, I couldn't sleep, I couldn't eat, I couldn't do anything. I could hear her screams in my head, day and night. And by every single passing moment, they are getting louder and louder. Until I couldn't bear them anymore and decided to help her instead of running away. Maybe, this will help me to finally have some peace. I can show you where they're keeping her. Hendrick Black is giving her hell. He's going to kill her. I just want her to be out of there

Scott put his hand on David's shoulder and said,

Scott: Let's get your daughter out of hell.

CASSIE'S POV:-

Hendrick Black: I've underestimated you.

He said while dressing up.

Hendrick Black: I thought I will break you with this but you are one hell of a person. You lost your virginity, but still no word. I like that a lot. You're actually my type of woman.

Cassie: This is your time Hendrick, but soon my time will come and then you'll realize that with whom you were messing.

Hendrick Black: Now or then, you will be mine. No. YOU ARE MINE. You belong to no one.

Cassie: No and never. I will die but won't be with a monster like you.

Hendrick Black: You think people will accept you like this, broken. You will come to me, crawling. Begging me to marry you, love you. Or else I will kill you myself.

Cassie: I will never beg you. I will die but won't beg you. Because I know I don't have to be worried. I have people who will.....

He cut me in mid sentence.

Hendrick Black: Who will what? Accept you? You're daydreaming Cassandra. Your so-called boyfriend has married a billionaire woman. All I did was tell him you're mine and gave him 20 million dollars. And what did he say you know? He said he couldn't imagine a middle class woman like you to be his wife. What a fool. Doesn't know what a treasure you really are.

I was shocked. I knew deep down that Sam Peterson is an opportunist, a bastard. But I haven't ever thought that after 2 years of relationship, he'll abandon me like that for money.

Hendrick Black: What happened darling? Out of words or got stuck in the fantasy that hungry bastard had created in your pretty head. You will come to me. He even knows where you are. But like a loyal dog, he won't speak.

Cassie: You can't break me. You think you'll succeed in your dark master plan to destroy Hunts. No. Never think for once that I'll let you win that easily.

Hendrick Black: Oh who cares for you to break or destroy the Hunts. This was never about them anyways. I want you and you're mine. I'll see you at night baby. Till then I'm leaving you with something that will remind you of me the whole day.

Before I could say anything, his lips came crushing mine. He roughly kissed me. I wanted to break free but he didn't let me. A minute or two later he released me. He had a smirk on his face.

Hendrick Black: Have a nice day.

With that he left me alone. I was crying on my helplessness. I've never felt so helpless before. At that moment all I was thinking about was all the pain in my life caused by him. I knew he would come back and to it all over again. I wanted the earth to swallow me before he returned. Or maybe God will show a bit of mercy and I will die. He'll stop my breaths or my beating heart. I closed my eyes then there was nothing but dark.

JO'S POV:-

I heard them talking. I felt sorry for her. She wanted it all to stop. But that monster. All he cared about things he wanted for his benefits. The door opened and Hendrick Black came out

Jo: It's been 3 weeks. You still think you can break her.

Hendrick Black: Who wants to break her. As soon as she says yes.

Jo: Yes? For what?

Hendrick Black: To be mine. I can't force her to marry me you know.

Jo: That's what you're doing actually.

Hendrick Black: Which shouldn't be bothering you. Because I've paid you, so mind your own business. I'll be back at night.

With that he left. I heard her sobbing for a while, then it stopped. I guessed she must have fallen asleep.

Meg: Now what? You still won't do a thing?

Jo: Mind your damn business.

Rock: We are minding our business bro. You Know we haven't signed up for this. It was a simple job to get words out of her. What's happening now is totally opposite.

Andy: At least Nelson had guts to quit the time this all had started.

Nelson: Nelson also has guts to do more than quit.

Jo: What the ...

Scott: Get on your knees, hands behind the head. Cuff them all you all are under arrest.

Agent Wolf: Where is my daughter? I swear to God if anything happened to her I will skin you alive.

Jo: In that room.

Andy opened the door and everyone got in.

Agent Wolf: Cassie. Baby wake up, look daddy's here.

Scott on earpiece: " We need the medics here."

Scott: Agent Wolf. Don't lose it now. She needs you. I better call Mr Hunt.

CHRIS POV:-

RING RING RING....

Chris:"Yes Scott."

Scott: "We have found her. Nelson was right. Agent Wolf is taking her to the hospital."

Chris:" Which one?"

Scott:" I've already sent you the location. I'll be there as soon as I'll get these guests to their new room."

Chris: "Okay. See you there."

I drove as fast as I could. I didn't know why but I just wanted to see her with my own eyes that she's fine. I reached the hospital, quickly parked my car and went straight to the ICU where the doctor just walked out of the room.

Agent Wolf: How is she?

Doctor: Your daughter slipped into a coma I can't say why. Her reports will be here soon. Maybe there is something we're missing. Right now I'm gonna suggest you sit by your daughter. She needs you.

Chris: Thank you doctor?

Doctor: Lara. Lara Dusk.

Chris: Okay Dr Dusk.

Mr Wolf was sitting by her side and I was out. I called Iris and my parents. They also came rushing. About 6 hours later Dr Dusk came back.

Dr Dusk: How do you know Miss Wolf?

Chris: We're friends. She works in my father's company. We're more like family to her.

Dr Dusk: So I can talk to you about her. I feel like her father's not in a condition to be told.

Chris: Yes.

Dr Dusk: Okay then follow me.

We reached her room. I sat on one of the chairs as she sat on hers.

Dr Dusk: Her reports arrived a few minutes ago. She's perfectly fine Mr Hunt. Yes, she was raped multiple times brutally, mercilessly. But she will be fine. I think she doesn't want to live anymore. That's why she slipped into the coma. She has some injuries. But nothing too complicated for the coma situation. She's depressed, hopeless. The main problem here is, she needs to realize that it's not her time to die. You all have to do that together. She can hear you all. So instead of sharing sorrows and tears, you all need to share smiles and happy thoughts, happy moments with her. Make her feel that you all need her. You all have to try a lot harder to get her back.

CHAPTER 7

CHRIS POV:-

After talking to Dr Dusk. I talked to the others. I told them everything Dr Dusk had told me. We all decided to make happy talks around her. Tell her everything positive happened in the last 10 months, and skip all the negative details.

Chris: Hey Cassie. How are you? They found your lucky charm. I had to beg the officer to get it back.

I just wanted to do something to make her wake up and see how much everyone is worried about her. I really couldn't see her like that. I just wanted her to open her beautiful eyes.

HENDRICK BLACK'S POV:-

Quinn: Sir!

Hendrick Black: Yes Quinn. Now what?

Quinn: Sir, I have bad news for you.

Hendrick Black: Just say it already.

Quinn: Sir FBI have found her.

Hendrick Black: What? When?

Quinn: 8 hours ago sir.

Hendrick Black: And you're telling me that now?

Quinn: Sir I just came to know a few minutes ago and I came straight to you.

Hendrick Black: Just get out.

How could that happen, she was well hidden. No one could find her unless someone had tipped off. I was just thinking about the next time I would meet her. I don't know why but Every time she was on my mercy, it brought me peace. I don't know why her sweet face brought peace to me every single time. I called my PA back in my office.

Quinn: May I come in sir?

Hendrick Black: Yes! Did you find any more details?

Quinn: Yes sir! She's in the hospital. She slipped into a coma. Her doctor strictly told everyone not to discuss any stressful details in front of her.

Hendrick Black: Very well. That's why I can't even imagine firing you. Without me saying a word, you always know what you have to do.

Quinn: Anything for you sir. I'm here and happy to serve you.

Hendrick Black: Email me all the other details.

Quinn: Yes sir but first, we need to take care of the FBI.

Hendrick Black: Don't worry. I have that in my pocket.

After I dismissed Quinn, I sat alone in my office. Thinking,

Hendrick Black: "What can be more stressful for her than me. I know, all I have to do is to show up my face and make her hear my voice. It will be the end of their life. I want her for myself. How could she leave me? If she won't be mine then I'll kill her. She belongs to me and me only. I'll kill her then I'll kill myself. Because, I can't imagine living my life without her. I fell for her a long time ago. And I was crazy and possessive for her."

In an hour I walked in the hospital, knowing her rooms and details.

Hendrick Black: Hello everyone.

I saw Christopher's eyes, filled with anger the moment he saw me.

Christopher: Why are you here?

Hendrick Black: Come on Christopher. I'm here to visit her, that's all.

Christopher: We don't need you here. So get your ass out of here.

I could see her pulse rising. She could sense me here. And she definitely didn't like that. So far my plan was working. I pushed past Christopher to touch her. My touch could do more damage, but to be honest I wanted to touch her one last time.

Hendrick Black: You can't kick me out Christopher, you're not her family as she doesn't have any. I can see you're the only one here.

Christopher: I said leave and don't you dare touch her.

Hendrick Black: Why are you behaving like a child claiming for his toy.

Christopher: She's not a toy, she's a human being and she doesn't want you here either.

Hendrick Black: How do you know that? Did she whisper in your ear?

Or told you in your dreams?

Christopher: Don't test my temper. Get the hell out of here.

Hendrick Black: I won't. Not until you answer my question. I can see it in your eyes Christopher, you're in love with her, aren't you?

Christopher: None of your business. Get Out.

Hendrick Black: That's never gonna happen Christopher, SHE'S MINE.

I yelled the last sentence and that's all I had to say. We heard the warning beep and then, flat lines. My plan actually worked. Well it always works. She's no more. So I left. Why do I need to stay? Curse him, he never even let me get close to her. Protective asshole. But I did what I wanted. I wanted to see her flat lines. I stepped out of the hospital, humming my favorite love song. The one I heard when I saw her the very first time 2 years ago. She's gone. Now she belongs to nobody.

Hendrick Black: See you in heaven my love...

CHRIS' POV:

He tried to touch her, I slapped his hand away. Pushed him back. I could hear her pulse getting lower and lower by every passing second. I tried to get him out but he wasn't moving. Then he said something and my heart almost stopped.

Hendrick Black: That's never gonna happen Christopher. SHE'S MINE.

Suddenly a smirk appeared on his face, like he had won a game. He exited the room. Just then I saw the flat lines on the monitor. Doctor and nurses bragged into the room and I started praying for her life.

Doctor: One two three clear

BEEP ----- flat lines

Nurse: Nothing sir.

Doctor: One two three clear

Nurse: Still nothing sir.

Doctor: Let's try again. One two three

I started praying a little louder.

Chris: Please come back to me Cassie. Please, I beg you. Don't leave me, please I need you Cassie. Please.

Doctor: Clear.

Flat lines ----- BEEP - BEEP - BEEP - BEEP.....

Nurse: She's back sir.

My legs work on their own, I got in the room and held her hand. She opened her eyes and looked at me. Just a moment it lasted, and she closed them again. Knowing that she's back, I sighed in relief, my heartbeat and breathing started to become normal again. I thanked God for giving her back to me and promised to protect her till my last breath and last drop of blood. I saw Iris came rushing.

Iris: What happened? What was that jerk doing here? Why was he here? Is there anything left to be done?

Chris: Calm down sister. He was here for something God didn't want.

Iris: What does that suppose to mean?

Chris: It means that karma is hitting him hard on his ass but he just doesn't understand.

Iris: Can you be a bit clearer?

Chris: He came here, said some things and we lost her.

Iris: What? What are.....

Chris: But God has planned something else for her. She came back. She even opened her eyes for a moment.

Iris: I don't see her awake.

Chris: Iris, I said she opened her eyes for a moment.

Iris: So is she back to coma?

Chris: No. Unconscious, but not in the coma anymore.

Iris: At least she's not the coma, That's a good sign.

I left Iris with Cassie. I had to go back to work. But all day I was occupied by those lovely eyes I saw again. I wanted the day to be over soon so I could go back to her. Maybe she'll open her eyes again, Or maybe I'll hear her voice. Finally the day was over. I went straight to home. I took a quick

shower and changed into my casual dark blue jeans and blue t-shirt. I ate my dinner fast, bid goodbyes to my parents and headed straight to the hospital.

Iris: Hey. You're early tonight.

Chris: Yeah. I got free early.

Which was kinda a lie. I was excited to see her again.

Iris: Okay. I'm going home then. Scott's already here. Good night Chris.

Chris: Okay good night. I'll see you in the morning.

Iris left and I sat on the couch beside her bed. I held her hand and interlaced my fingers with hers. For a moment I felt like she squeezed my hand. Just for a moment. I smiled, I leaned forward, putting my head on the bed. When I drifted off to sleep, I didn't know.

Next morning I woke up. It was still early. I could see the sun rise from the window.

I was still holding her hand. I looked at her beautiful yet Innocent face, this close to me. My brain shut down, seeing her beautiful face this close to me. My heart started beating so loud and fast in my chest. In that moment my heart took full control of my body.

I started leaning in. I leaned until I was able to count every single lash on her eyes. Just then without thinking I kissed her. My heart was beating erratically in my chest. Anyone could see us like that, but at that moment, I didn't care. I didn't know for how long our lips were connected, but it felt heavenly. Before I would lose control, I broke the kiss. I could hear her heart too. Beating so fast in her chest. When I got back to my senses. A sudden wave of guilt hit me for doing something like that without her permission. Iris came into the room and I left without saying a single word. More like running away.

CASSIE'S POV:-

I was stuck in the nightmare. Hendrick Black was hunting me. I was scared, asking for help. Suddenly I felt someone holding my hand. When I looked, it was Chris. He intertwined his fingers with mine. And all my fears, including Hendrick Black. All of them disappeared. I looked at him with a smile and gave his hand a little squeeze, an assurance that I appreciate his presence. We sat down on the floor. And started our happy chit chat. We kept talking until I saw the dawn. The golden rising sun. It felt like decades. I looked in Chris's eyes and he did something. Something that I've never imagined. Something that shocked me but also healed all the pains in my chest. He kissed me. I wanted to move, kiss him back but I just couldn't move. In a few minutes it ended. I didn't want that to end. I was about to tell him that when I realized that he was no longer there. He was

gone, where? I didn't know. I was in dark, scared that Hendrick Black will be here any minute to torture me again. I wanted Chris by my side but he was gone, and I didn't know how to call him back. I sat down on the floor, hugged my knees and sobbed for hours.

A little while later, I don't know how but I was able to see the light again. There was low murmur, but it started to get clearer. Someone's talking to me but who, I was all alone. The voice sounded familiar, then it hit me. I recognized the voice. It was Iris's voice.

Iris: Have something on but that's not the big deal. You know, Scott finally proposed to me but didn't give me a ring. He said he'll do it when you'll wake up. Now all you have to do is open your eyes. We both are waiting for you to wake up. I told him already that I want to go to Paris for our honeymoon. He was shocked when I said that but I made it very clear that I will go to Paris and Paris only.

Cassie: I thought you hate Paris.

Iris: Yeah. I did. But the way you always talked about it I....

She didn't realize that I replied to her. But when she did, she threw herself to me, hugging me on the bed.

Iris: You're awake Cassie. You're back.

I smiled, seeing her face after almost a year. All emotions flowed and I wrapped my hand on her waist too. After a few minutes she backed up and said.

Iris: I need to call the doctor. God you're awake.

She informed the nurse and the doctor came rushing to my room.

Doctor: Hello Cassandra. I'm Dr Lara Dusk. How are you feeling now?

Cassie: Better after seeing her.

Dr Dusk: That's a good sign. Are you hungry? You want something?

I looked at Iris with an innocent smile and she said.

Iris: Oh no! She wants hot chocolate with chocolate chip cookies.

Cassie: Yes please.

Dr Dusk: Oh no! You first have to start with light things like fruits and vegetables juices.

CHAPTER 8

CASSIE'S POV-

Hendrick Black: "Hello pretty face. Did you miss me my love?"

Cassie: "No! No it can't be."

Hendrick Black: "It can't be what, my love?"

Cassie: "You can't be here."

Hendrick Black: "If you want me to touch you then just say it. I'm not gonna say no to you."

Cassie: "Stay away from me you monster."

Hendrick Black: "This monster is your fate, pretty face."

Cassie: "No please. I beg you."

Hendrick Black: "That's right. Beg for my mercy."

Cassie: "No stay away. No....."

David Wolf: Cassie.....! Cassie. Hey hey.... Shhhhh..... It's okay baby. I'm here. Nobody's gonna hurt you.

Cassie: Dad.

David Wolf: Yes baby.

Cassie: He hunts me in my dreams too.

I said almost a whisper.

David Wolf: Who?

Cassie: The monster.

He sat with me on the bed and pulled me to his chest. I buried my face in his chest and cried for I don't know how long. I inhale his scent. My father smelled like home. With his arms wrapped around me, after a long long time I felt safe. I didn't let him go. He laid down on the bed with me. I hold him even tighter.

Cassie: Dad!

David Wolf: Hmmm...

Cassie: Don't leave me.

David Wolf: I won't baby. I promise. Close your eyes and go back to sleep.

He kissed the top of my head. His embrace felt safe as home. I closed my eyes and drifted off sleep.

IRIS'S POV:-

It was 10 in the morning, when I reached the hospital. It was my turn to be with my sister like friend. I really can't remember the last time she needed me. I was always the one who got in trouble and she always comes to help me. I almost can't believe a normal girl became this much amazing friend of mine. This time she needed me. I walked in her room when I saw her sleeping in her father's arms like a baby. It was the most adorable thing. Mr Wolf and Cassie were attached to each other more. She tells her father everything, calls him every weekend, talks to him hours like talking to a friend. Their relationship was adorable and lovely. I stepped in the room and put my hand lightly on his shoulder and whispered.

Iris: Mr Wolf. Good morning.

Mr Wolf: Good morning Iris.

Iris: How is she?

Mr Wolf: Better.

Iris: I'm here now.

Mr Wolf: Yeah but I'm not leaving today. I promised her.

Iris: Okay. Then you better go back to sleep.

Mr Wolf: Yeah.

Iris: If she'll wake up or something. I'll take care of it. Don't worry.

Mr Wolf: Thank you Iris.

Iris: Don't thank me Mr Wolf. Anything for her.

He gave me a thankful smile and closed his eyes. Both father and daughter slept in peace. I sat on the couch, opened my laptop to continue my work. My father gave me Permission to work online because at this time every day I come here to take care of Cassie. I was kind of worried about my brother too. Last he came to the hospital was when she woke up. I mean, it had been 3 days and he hadn't visited. I knew my brother cared for her, so why hasn't he visited? I tried to ask him but he always brushed off the topic. I fished my phone out of my bag and dialed Scott. Maybe he knows.

Scott: " Hey my sparrow."

Iris: "Hey! Where are you?"

Scott: "At work sparrow. Why? Is everything okay?"

Iris: "Yeah! I just wanted to talk to you about Chris."

Scott: " What about him?"

Iris: "He's acting a bit weird. He hasn't visited Cassie in 3 days. It's strange."

Scott: " Really? Did you try to ask him?"

Iris: " I tried, many times Scott. But he either brushes off the topic or leaves."

Scott: "Don't worry. I'll talk to him. How is she now?"

Iris: "Peacefully sleeping in her father's arms."

Scott: "I'll visit her today, but I'm not sure what to bring? Flowers or teddy bears?"

Iris: "Of course teddy bear. She loves them."

Scott: "Okay. Thanks sparrow. I'll see you in the evening."

Iris: "Okay. See you. Bye."

I hung up. Scott and I, know each other since childhood. Our fathers are friends so we became friends either. We went to school together. He knows me very well. We started dating 9 years ago and that credit goes to Cassie. I stayed there, kept doing my work. It was almost 4pm when Cassie stretched her arms. Mr Wolf was still in his deep sleep. Lucky me, I was done with my work. I stood up and sat on the couch beside her bed. We whisper talked, making sure we wouldn't disturb Mr Wolf.

Iris: How are you?

Cassie: I'm good. How are you?

Iris: I'm fine. Mom will visit today. She was baking your favorite chocolate chip cookies.

Cassie: Really. I can't wait.

Iris: And Scott said he'll come too

Cassie: I don't know how to thank you all for being here for me.

Mr Wolf: You don't have to baby. We are all family.

Mr Wolf said and kissed her forehead.

Iris: Yeah. So don't stress about it.

She smiled but I could see that wasn't the way she used to smile. It was like she was a broken Soul. Nothing left in her. I wanted to cry in front of her but I controlled myself. We needed to bring her back to her real self and for that we all had to be strong and supportive for her. But the only person could push her to get back to her old self was my brother Chris. Who was clearly avoiding her. Why? God knows.

Cassie: Iris.

Iris: Yeah?

Cassie: Did..... Ummmmmm..... Did Chris come?

Iris: No. Why? You want me to call him?

Cassie: I don't want you to call anyone.

I could see her eyes filled with tears when she said that. That made my blood boil. I was so angry at my brother. How could he be so careless. I saw my mom come into the room and the smell of freshly baked cookies filled the room. Cassie inhaled the aroma deeply and finally I saw her smiling cheekily. At least, these cookies made her happy.

Iris: How long can you stay mom?

Stella: An hour or so. Why?

Iris: Can you stay with her until I return? I have urgent work.

Stella: Okay honey. But be quick.

Iris: Yeah. Don't worry. Scott will be here too.

I walked out of the room boiling in anger. I went to the parking lot. Got into my car and drove to my brother's school. I parked my car in school parking and marched towards my brother's office. I opened the door in almost a disrespectful way. My brother snapped his head up and spoke in anger.

Chris: Is that the way you step into your older brother's office?

Iris: Don't. Don't you dare to speak with me.

Chris: Iris! Have you lost your mind?

Iris: Yes I have. Because I'm angry at you. Why the hell are you doing that to her?

Chris: Doing what with who?

Iris: Don't play dumb games with me. You know who and what am I talking about!

Chris: Iris. If you wanna play puzzle games then please leave. I'm busy right now.

Iris: I'm talking about Cassie and you know what conversation we're having.

Chris: What do you want Iris?

Iris: Just an answer. What will it take for you to visit her?

Chris: I'm busy Iris. Can't you see.

Iris: Fine. Keep lying to yourself. But you know what? She cried today and she cried because of you. I will never forgive you for that. We all are trying hard to make her smile but you on the other hand, did something to make her cry. She's thinking that because whatever happened to her, she's not worthy enough for us all. And you're making her feel worse. I know you're gonna regret it one day and will never forgive yourself for pushing her to the darkness.

I felt a little better after scolding my brother for his childishness. I didn't know why he was doing that. But it was doing worse for Cassie. She started to think of herself as something lower. How could he do that to her.

CHRIS'S POV:-

My sister came in fuming, scolded me like my mother, and left. I was shocked, my sister never raised her voice in front of me. But today she was yelling at me. She told me that Cassie cried today because of me. I felt my chest aching. Nothing new to me. I knew I was attached to her, not just that, I also knew I care about her. I was feeling guilty, she cried because of me. I decided to go to the hospital. Whatever I did I couldn't just make her feel that way. And if I'm being honest I wanted to see her. I rushed out of my office, went to my car and drove straight to the hospital.

In an hour or so I reached the hospital. I parked my car, made my way to her room. I was excited to see her but I was also nervous if she asked me why I kissed her? Even though I don't know why I would do that she is engaged, for God's sake, why did I do that but I only care to see her. It was my fault that I kissed her but I have no rights to push her or make her feel bad for something she hadn't done. I could hear her talking, her voice was full of pain. when I stepped in I saw her face had a fake smile but it eventually fell when she saw my face. Tears welled up in her eyes. Now I started to feel worse. she is crying because of me. How could I do that to her. My sister Iris and Scott were in the room.

Iris: Finally.

Scott: Ummm. We need to go Iris.

Iris: Yes! Chris, you made her cry again and I promise to break your nose.

That was max my sister could do. Break my nose. I knew her, she respected me but a broken nose would be horrible for my handsome face so I raised my both hands in surrender.

Chris: Why would I do that? I'm not the bad guy here.

Iris: Just make sure you won't. Bye Cassie. I'll see you in the morning.

Cassie: I'll be waiting.

Her voice was shaky like she was trying to keep herself composed but it didn't do much. Iris and Scott bid their goodbyes and went out. I was left alone with her. I walked towards her. She turned her face to the opposite side. I sighed and sat on the chair beside the bed.

Cassie: Don't push yourself Chris. I can understand. I'm not the same old Cassie anymore. I'm a broken Soul. Hendrick Black was right. I'm unacceptable.

My heart swelled on her words. Somehow I was the reason she felt that way. I took her hand in mine. She turned to look at me.

Chris: I'm sorry Cassie. It isn't you. It's me. I did something that made me feel guilty, so I left.

Cassie: What do you mean?

I looked at her, her eyes were filled with tears. I couldn't take that anymore so I told her the truth

Chris: I kissed you. I shouldn't have done that I'm sorry Cassie. It was the reason I left. I mean you're engaged and I shouldn't have.....

Cassie: Not anymore.

Chris: What do you mean Cassie?

She broke into tears. I made her sit and sat with her on the bed. She leaned forward and put her head on my chest. I wrapped a hand around her waist and started rubbing her back, soothingly with the other.

Chris: Whatever it is Cassie you can speak to me you know. That's what we do. Listen to each other.

She sighed and said.

Cassie: He's married.

Chris: Who?

Cassie: Sam, he got married to a billionaire woman. He even knew where I was but didn't help me or tell anyone.

Chris: Did he visit you there?

Cassie: No. Hendrick Black told me. He told me that he paid Sam to leave me and Sam said that he can't imagine a middle class girl to be his wife.

Chris: Shhhh..... Don't think like that Candy. You're so special. Jerks like Sam can't understand that. You're a jewel they can't have ever.

Cassie: Chris....

Chris: Hmmm.....

Cassie: Promise me you will not leave next I'll open my eyes.

Chris: I promise you. I will be with you till death.

CHAPTER 9

Hearing my answer, Cassie buried her face in my chest. We stayed like that for a bit longer than usual. I've hugged her before but this time, it's different. It was a warm and sweet hug.

Cassie: Chris....

She whispered.

Chris: Hmmm.....

Cassie: It felt so good when you called me candy again.

I smiled and Helen her a bit tighter. After a while, we broke the hug and I sat back on the couch. She looked at me with guilty eyes.

Chris: What is it Candy?

Cassie: I'm sorry for troubling you this much.

Chris: Hey! Don't say things like that or I won't visit you again.

Cassie: Okay okay. I won't.

She was laying on the bed while I was on the couch. I leaned my head back on the bed again and closed my eyes. I was very tired. She put her hand on my head and started stroking my hair, massaging my scalp with her soft fingers. It felt so good and soothing. And I felt better after a long tiring day. I looked at her but she was in her deep thoughts as she didn't even notice what she was doing. I decided not to interrupt her, I put my head back on the bed, closed my eyes and drifted off sleep.

A bit later I felt like someone was tugging my hair roughly. I opened my eyes to see if Cassie's okay. She was not. She was having a nightmare again and sobbing badly. I stood up from the couch and sat on the edge of the bed. I stroke her cheek with my thumb softly and said.

Chris: Hey Cassie. Wake up.

It took her a minute to open her eyes. She looked at me and started crying. Seeing that, I kicked off my shoes and laid beside her on the bed. I held her close to me and tried to calm her down.

Chris: Shhhh..... It's okay Cassie. You're okay. I'm here.

Cassie: You didn't leave me this time.

Chris: I promised you that I will stay.

We cuddled with each other and I said.

Chris: Close your eyes and go back to sleep. I won't let anyone hurt you candy I promise.

She closed her eyes and drifted off sleep. She slept so peacefully. Seeing her beautiful face I kissed her forehead and closed my eyes as well.

I heard a lady clearing her throat, I opened my eyes, it was Iris. Smiling sheepishly, looking at both of us. I looked at Cassie. She was awake and giggling shyly.

Cassie: Good morning.

Chris: Good morning beautiful. When did you wake up?

Cassie: Long ago. I tried to wake you up but you were in another world.

Iris: You never cuddled up with me like that Chris.

Chris: Not funny candy and shut up Iris.

Iris: Well I have great news. Doctor said Cassie will be discharged today. Her father will be here at 3pm. We're taking you home.

Chris: Well that's a good news. I'll see you at home candy.

I kissed her forehead and left. Once I was in my car I fished out my phone and called detective Dean.

Detective Dean: "Hello Mr Hunt. How can I help you?"

Chris: "I want a favor from you Detective. It's connected to the case, but you first have to confirm it."

Detective Dean: "Tell me. I'll see what I can do to help."

Chris: "We've told you about Mr Peterson?"

Detective Dean: "Yes. What about him?"

Chris: "He's somehow connected to the case. He knew about Cassie's location and still stayed silent. I want to know when he got married?"

Detective Dean: "Wait! He's married?"

Chris: "He is now. I just wanna know when?"

Detective Dean: "So what does his wedding have to do with the case?"

Chris: "I'll tell you everything. Just find out what I asked. Once everything is clear to me, I'll tell you."

Detective Dean: "Okay. I'll get back to you as soon as I can."

Chris: "Thank you Detective. Have a good day."

Detective Dean: "Thank you sir. You too."

"So many puzzle pieces in front of me, but a few missing. Once they are all in my hands, all I have to do is to place them together. And I will know Hendrick's game. I thought, but still I had to be sure so I called detective Dean, as Sam didn't know him. Telling agent Wolf or Scott could blow up everything. So I decided to play smarter than Hendrick. I put my phone back in my pocket and drove back to my parent's Villa. When I got home, I saw my mother baking cookies. I kissed her cheek and she smiled.

Stella: Good morning son. How is she doing now?

Chris: Good morning mother. She's better. Iris talked to the doctor. They said Cassie will be free today.

Stella: That's really good news. I guess she'll have these cookies at her place today.

Chris: No mother. She's staying here with us.

Stella: Honey. Her father's here and he.....

Chris: I've already talked to him. We're not taking any more risks.

Stella: Okay then. Now go and get ready. I'll get breakfast ready for you.

Chris: Thank you mother.

I went to my room, took a quick shower and quickly got dressed in royal Black tux and went straight to the dinning hall. My father was having his breakfast.

Adam Hunt: Good morning young man.

Chris: Good morning father.

Adam Hunt: You look happy today. What's the occasion?

Chris: Nothing father. Cassie will be discharged today.

Adam Hunt: Well that's a really good news.

Then we ate in silence. Once I finished my breakfast, I bid my goodbyes to my parents and headed to the school.

HENDRICK BLACK'S POV:-

18 DAYS AGO.

I left the hospital, knowing she's dead now. And I couldn't wait to meet her, but I had to wait for her to get buried, so I could will my assistant to bury me besides her. I didn't want to be away from her even after death. I wanted her to be around me. She was mine, she is mine and SHE WILL ALWAYS BE MINE. No one could take her away from me. I was in my office afterwards. I cancelled all my meetings. I was eagerly waiting for the good news. I was walking back and forth in my office. Hours passed but nothing, at last I decided to call Quinn In my office and ask him myself.

Quinn: May I come in sir?

Hendrick Black: Yes! Tell me what you've got?

Quinn: It's a bad news sir.

I smiled. Finally music to my ears.

Hendrick Black: Not bad for me.

Quinn: No sir you don't understand. She's still alive and also made out of a coma.

Hendrick Black: WHAT...!!????

I stood up in shock. "How is it possible? I saw the flat lines. How could she be alive? When did that happen?"

Hendrick Black: When did you come to know?

Quinn: Sir I can ex.....

Hendrick Black: Answer the damn question Quinn. When. Did. You. Come. To . Know?

I yelled at him. I wasn't really in the mood to play games. He hesitated but answered me eventually.

Quinn: The time you walked in and told me to keep my eyes and ears at the hospital.

Hendrick Black: Get out of here Quinn and don't show your face until I call you myself.

Quinn: No sir please. I beg you don't fire me I.....

Hendrick Black: Oh you're not fired. You'll be back on the job but a few days will teach you a lesson about being obedient to me. Now Get Out. I don't want to see your face.

Quinn left and I sat back on my chair. I was so happy to have her to myself only but fate, fate turned all the tables around and I lost again. But I wouldn't just sit back and accept that I've lost. I started thinking about my next moves. I got rid of my tux coat and my tie. I opened three top

buttons of my shirt and rolled up my sleeves. I stayed in my office the whole night to think, think and just think. I wasn't a stupid emotional freak who'll get drunk. I've never had a single drop of alcohol in my whole life. Yes! I was a womanizer. But I haven't even looked at another woman since I saw my Cassandra. Her gorgeous face, her innocent smile, her beautiful deep eyes and her sweet voice. I fell in love with her the very second I saw her. I set her up with that jerk Peterson. That hungry jerk. I knew him very well. He only dated women for his own benefits. I was just thinking about her and my time with her. Those three weeks were the best weeks of my life. But they took her away from me. I waited 8 months to make my plan work. Only then I was able to see her like I've ever wanted. Right in front of me and on my mercy.

CASSIE'S POV:-

BACK IN TIME.

Chris left the hospital and Iris busied herself in some work. To be honest I wasn't in the mood to talk to anyone. Not because I had a bad mood or something. But because I was actually very happy after a long long time. When I woke up in the morning, I saw his Peaceful sleeping face. I smiled, actually it was the first time in 9 years, I've seen him sleeping. He looks adorably cute. He sleeps like a baby, and he was snoring. I tried to wake him up but instead of opening his eyes he tightened his hold on me. In a while I stopped struggling and gave in. I put my head on his chest, closed my eyes and inhaled his citrus and wood scent deeply. I enjoyed his warmth. Something had changed between us. Something was different. The time he kissed me, it all changed. I was enjoying his embrace when Iris stepped in and cleared her throat. God Iris. Always the bad timing. She cleared her throat again and Chris woke up. Damn it, I hate whenever she shows up at the wrong time. We all made small chats, she teased Chris a bit, then she told me that I'll be free today. Chris had already left. My father came in a while and Iris left for some meeting she had. My dad sat on the edge of the bed and pulled me in a big hug. I always liked it when he hugged me like this. I was attached to my dad. He helped me in my life so much and I always made him feel proud of me.

David Wolf: How's my baby girl?

Cassie: I'm fine dad. I'm better.

David Wolf: We're leaving today.

Cassie: Yeah. I'm happy.

David Wolf: Christopher wants you to stay with Hunts until we arrest Hendrick Black.

Cassie: And what do you think?

David Wolf: I think it's the best idea. You'll be safe with them.

Cassie: As you wish dad.

David Wolf: And I'll be leaving soon.

Cassie: What! Why? I thought you'll stay here with me but you're going.

David Wolf: Try to understand baby. I have to go back to work. I'll visit you every week I promise. Not this month. But from next month.

He kissed my temple and I smiled. At least he'll visit and I'll be with Hunts, so I'm not worried. I closed my eyes and welcomed all the comfort his embrace was providing me. I Wanted to be with him as long as he's here. Soon the doctor came to my room and checked me up and approved me to be free. Mrs Hunt came in too and my father went to sign the discharge papers. Mrs Hunt asked me.

Stella: Are you excited to go back home?

Cassie: Only if you baked me cookies.

Stella: Of course I've baked you cookies.

My dad came back. He packed my bags and Stella helped me to change. We left the hospital together. After one and a half hours drive we finally reached Hunt's Villa. Scott and Iris were there to welcome me but I turned around and showed them my back.

Iris: What's wrong? Come on in.

Cassie: No.

Iris: What? Why not? Are you mad at me or something?

Cassie: Yes I am. Not only on you I'm also mad at Scott.

Scott: Wait what? Me? What did I do?

I turned to them and said.

Cassie: You said you both are waiting for me to wake up. I'm awake but I don't see any ring in your hands and you proposed to her while I was unconscious.

They both smiled, understood what I was talking about. Scott fished out the ring from his pocket, sat on one knee, took her hand in his and said.

Scott: The time you came into my life. It changed. You pulled me out of my comfort zone I've created. You make me smile, you make me laugh. All my anger, my sorrows, my pains and my tears, they disappear just as I look at you angelic face. I share every single detail of my life with you because I know you keep my secrets safe. You're my friend, you're my love and you're my life and I

can't think for a second to live my life without you. So Iris Hunt, I, Scott Lu, want to be happily married to you. I want to be the one to see your beautiful face first in the morning. I want to love you, hug you, kiss you, protect you, respect you and help you to win every single battle of your life. I want to make you mine. I want to be with you every sunrise, and sunset. I want to enjoy every Easter, Halloween, Christmas and New year with you. So tell me. Will you make me the happiest man on Earth? Will you accept my proposal? Will you accept to live your life with me? I promise you my love, care and respect, till I turn grey and old. I promise you a happy life till death do us apart.

Iris' eyes were filled with tears of joy. It was like he opened his heart in front of all of us. Iris and Scott were friends with each other since childhood as their fathers are also friends. But the way he proposed to her, it wasn't a question, it was a promise, a promise to be together till the end. Even I could feel my emotions welled up and my father held me because I was crying. I knew Scott for years. Iris introduced us both. Scott was like a brother to me and I knew he was madly in love with Iris. But never dared to tell her. Always said, "what if she said no?" I forced him to propose to her, to confess his love to her and when he did Iris happily accepted his love. Since then they have been dating each other. They're meant to be together. Everyone was eagerly waiting for iris' reply. As she was silent. At last I decided to break the silence.

Cassie: Iris. Say something. We're waiting.

Iris: Well.....

CHAPTER 10

IRIS'S POV:-

I watched as Scott's face was changing its colors. He wanted to know whether I will accept him or reject him. Of course I'll accept. I will never reject him. He's the love of my life and I have a serious crush on him since childhood. Yes! Childhood. He is tall and handsome and he has cute curly hair and I always like those cute curls. His deep brown eyes and the way they sparkle every time he sees me. His sharp jawlines, the hottest thing I've ever seen. He was a dream man for me. And I've always idealized him since we were children. I wanted to say something to ease him up but my tongue wasn't moving at all. My words died, and I also wasn't moving at all. I froze at my place. Cassie finally spoke and unfroze me.

Cassie: Iris! Say something.

I took a deep breath and finally gave my answer.

Iris: Well....!!!! Yes! Yes I do want to live my life with you as your wife and I promise you that I will be there everyday and every moment for you. I want to turn gray with you. I want to live with you and I want to die with you.

Scott slid the ring in my finger, stood up and kissed me lovingly. Then he pulled me to his chest. I locked my hands around his waist and he held me close to him for so long. My mom, Mr Wolf and Cassie all were cheering and clapping. Cassie came to us and hugged us both. She was the reason we are together now. We were madly in love with each other but too afraid of the negative possibilities. To be honest she was the one who set us up. She is a true friend and I'm glad she came into my life and became my friend.

Stella: Okay. Come on now.

We all walked into the house. The whole Villa smelled as vanilla and chocolate. I knew mom must have baked hundreds of cookies for Cassie. She always thinks of Cassie as her other daughter. Cassie came in and inhaled the aroma deeply. Her eyes sparkled and she ran towards the kitchen. A bucket was full of cookies. She picked one and took a huge bite and she moaned in excitement.

Stella: Do you like it Cassie?

Cassie: Like? I love it thanks Mom.....

CASSIE'S POV:-

As soon as I stepped in. Mouth watering aroma of vanilla and chocolate filled my lungs and I inhaled it as deep as I could. I ran to the kitchen. I saw a bucket full of cookies on the kitchen counter. Stella filled my mug with her special and yummy hot chocolate. I picked up a cookie and took a bite. It was delicious. Heavenly flavor of vanilla and chocolate burst into my mouth as I moaned excitedly. Stella's voice brought me back to earth.

Stella: Do you like it Cassie?

Cassie: Like? I love it. Thanks Mom.

Those words escaped my mouth and I froze. My eyes widened. I was in a shock. Why would I call her mom. My mother never even fried an egg for me. Seeing my shocked face Stella walked towards me, pulled me in a motherly hug and spoke.

Stella: From now on I have two daughters. And you'll also call me mom as Iris okay! I would love that Cassie, it felt so good to me.

I smiled and nodded in agreement. She was more mother to me than my own mother. So maybe that's why I called her mom. Soon Chris was home too. He joined us in the kitchen. I picked another cookie and was about to take a bite when Chris snatched it from my hand and put it whole in his mouth.

Cassie: Hey.... That's mine.

Chris: Oh yeah! But now it's gone.

Cassie: You're mean.

Chris: I know Candy.

Cassie: I hate you.

He whispered in my ear.

Chris: No you don't.

He smirked at me and my cheeks turned red. He was right. I don't hate him. In fact I can't hate him ever. But why? We are friends and I've known him for so long. Yes! I've always felt free to share things with him. Felt comfortable around him. He was so caring and kind and friendly. But this new feeling. This was something new. Something I've never felt in my life before. I shook my head and picked another cookie. We all sat there for a long time, eating cookies, drinking hot chocolate and chatting happily. I forgot all the things that had happened in the past 10 months. At that moment, everything and everyone was normal.

IRIS'S POV:-

We all were sitting in the dining hall, talking happily with each other. Sun was setting, I got up and my mother asked.

Stella: Where are you going young lady?

Iris: I'm gonna go get ready. I have a date.

Cassie: You didn't tell me that.

Iris: Yeah. You were too busy with cookies. Besides, I just received Scott's text, saying " I'll pick you up at 8 sharp. I've planned a surprise for you."

Cassie: Oh.... That's so romantic. I'm so happy for you.

Iris: I know and I love you.

Cassie: I love you too.

With that, I left the dinning hall and went straight to my room. After a quick shower I wrapped a towel on my body and stepped out of the bathroom. I dried my hair, applied a little amount of makeup, not too much, just to brighten up my features. Once done, I wore my dress. It was a baby pink knee length, backless dress. It hugged my curves perfectly. I put on my heels, checked myself in the mirror last time and walked out of the room. It was 7:55 and as I knew Scott he would be here anytime. I stepped in the dinning hall and heard Cassie's gasp.

Cassie: You look beautiful Iris.

I walked to her and pulled her in a long sister hug.

Iris: Thanks.

Cassie: Go get him girl.

Iris: That's the plan.

I said it with a wink. Just then I heard a honk. "He's here." I thought as I bid my goodbyes and went out of the house. I walked to his car, Scott looked at me and his jaw fell on the ground.

Iris: Pick up your jaw baby.

Scott: Sorry. You're looking so stunning, I can't help.

He opened the passenger side door for me. I hopped in, he closed the door, went to his side and we drove off.

Scott: Get ready for the first surprise of the night.

Iris: First! How many surprises are there actually?

Scott: You'll see and I know you're gonna love them all.

Iris: Okay. I'm trusting you with that.

I was so excited and waiting for him to give me a hint or something. But he hadn't said a single word. After about two hours of long drive, we stopped in front of a luxurious dine in. It was beautiful, just as I always liked. He put his hand on my back and we walked in. He made a reservation on the top floor. It was full moon night and the roof was decorated with the candles. It was breathtaking.

Scott: So what do you think?

Instead of answering his question I kissed him. He took my hand and we walked to our table. He pulled my chair, like a gentleman. I sat and then he sat on his seat opposite to mine. It was all magical. And I couldn't ask for anything else in my life. I'm engaged to the love of my life and he's on a date with me.

Waiter: Sir, ma'am. How may I serve you?

We ordered and the waiter left.

Scott: You're so beautiful.

I blushed and replied

Iris: It's you who makes me beautiful.

Scott: Is that so!!!

Iris: Yes.

Scott: How?

Iris: Simple, Every time you look at me, your eyes shine like a shining star. And I love that shine in your eyes. So I take care of myself, pamper myself and keep myself healthy so that shine would never fade away.

Scott: Well, what can I do. World's most beautiful woman is in front of me. I just admire the view.

Iris: So you think I'm the world's most beautiful woman?

Scott: Yes! Beautiful, stylish, smart, caring and loving. But more importantly, my hope.

Iris: I'm a hope for you?

Scott: Yes you are. And I can't wait to start every day of my life with you and end it with you as well.

Iris: I also can't wait to open my eyes in your arms everyday and drift off in your warm embrace every night.

Scott: Then it's settled. We won't take a huge bed for our bedroom.

Iris: What does that suppose to mean?

Scott: Well a small bed will help us more to cuddle close with each other. And I'm telling you, you have to cuddle me every night. It's my demand.

I was saved by the arrival of the food. We ate in peace, we didn't talk a lot while we were eating. The beautiful silver moon was shining bright above our heads. Scott was looking hotter in the moonlight. His eyes were shining every time he looked at me. We finished our food, he paid the bills and went back to our car. But Scott drove in the opposite direction. I knew he had surprises but I still asked.

Iris: This isn't the way to home Scott.

Scott: Yes it is sparrow, do you trust me?

Iris: Of course. Why are you even asking?

Scott: Then pick up those blinds and cover your eyes, and no cheating okay!

Iris: Why....?

Scott: Come on do it, you'll know everything.

Iris: This better be good or you're a dead man.

Scott: Trust me sparrow. It's better than good.

I did as he told me. I covered my eyes with the blinds, completely covering them. After a bit of time, the car came to a halt and I sighed in relief.

Scott: Don't try to get out of the car. I'll take you myself.

I nodded. I heard the car door opened. Then Scott came to my side, opened my side door, unbuckled my seat belt and carried me bridal style in his arms. I was giggling as he was walking. I heard an elevator ding. It wasn't long when I heard the ding again and he started to walk again. He walked a bit then stopped and sat me down on the ground, saying not to move. I heard a click like a door was being unlocked. Scott grabbed my hand and we slowly walked. He closed the door. I heard that clearly then he asked me.

Scott: Are you ready honey?

Iris: Honey? Where did that come from?

Scott: Iris! God you're a mood killer.

Iris: Okay okay. I'm ready.

He removed the blinds and I opened my eyes slowly. I gasped as I saw where he actually had brought me. It's my favorite apartment. I told him that one day I would buy one for myself. It was well furnished. And styled, decorated and painted as I've ever dreamt. I was looking around in awe. I wanted to say something but there were no words to describe it so I hugged in instead.

Scott: I'm really glad that you like this place. Now, time for the last two surprises for tonight. One. We own this place. And second, we're staying here tonight, I already told your mom.

We went to our room. There were some comfy clothes there so we changed and cuddled with each other in our own apartment. And as he said, the bed wasn't too big.

CHRIS'S POV:-

I heard Cassie's screams, I got up from my bed and rushed to her room. She was having a nightmare again. I quickly sat on her bed and gently stroked her cheek to wake her up.

Chris: Hey Cassie.... Wake up.... You're fine.

She slowly opened her eyes and looked at me. She quickly got up and hugged me. I pulled her in my lap and rubbed her back soothingly to calm her down. She calmed down a bit then suddenly she pushed herself out of my lap and covered her eyes with her hand. I was confused so I asked.

Chris: What is it Cassie?

Cassie: God Chris. Put on a shirt. You came to my room half naked.

I laughed and replied.

Chris: Sorry Candy but you didn't give me a chance to do that, by the way you like what you see?

Cassie: God you're so shameless.

She was blushing. It was cute. Whenever she blushes her nose turns rosy pink along with her cheeks and I find it very attractive and stunning. I grabbed her wrists and she opened her eyes. She blushed even more. I could hear her heart was drumming in her chest louder than ever. She looked in my eyes, breathing heavily. I pinned her on the bed and held her hands above her head.

CASSIE'S POV:-

Chris pinned me on my bed. My heart was beating erratically in my chest. I was blushing, I knew I would be a red tomato. I looked at him, he was looking so hot. I've never seen him shirtless before. He has a muscular well toned body, hard chest and 8 packs. " God he's hot as hell. Wait, why am I

thinking like that, oh because he's half naked and I'm pinned to the bed with him upon me." I thought. I gathered all the courage I could but still my was a low whisper.

Cassie: Chris!!!

Chris: Yes Candy....

Cassie: What are you doing?

Chris: Admiring the view in front of me.

Chris: Chris let me go.

Instead of letting me go he leaned in and kissed my neck.

Cassie: Chris. Get off of me.

He kissed my collar bone then my chin.

Cassie: Are you even listening to me?

He was about to kiss me on my lips when I held my breath and said...

Cassie: Please.....

He smirked and kissed my forehead. He pulled the covers on me.

Cassie: What if I got nightmares again?

Chris: You won't. I promise you Candy.

With that he got up, and got out of the room, leaving me alone. Everything that had happened with him, started playing in my head like a film. I smiled and closed my eyes and to my surprise I quickly drifted off sleep.

CHAPTER 11

I woke up in the morning, bright and early. I was thankful to God that I didn't have any nightmare. Chris was right. With that I remembered my encounter with Chris. I love the feeling. I shook my head and looked at the clock, it was 7am. "Seriously, I woke up this early. I used to wake up this early when I had my job. I have to find a new job." I was thinking when someone knocked on the door.

Cassie: Come in.

Iris: Thank God you are up. Now move your butt and get ready. Vacations are over darling. Get your butt back to work.

Cassie: Wait what? Work???

Iris: Yes! Dad said your hard work is irreplaceable, so move it lazy butt.

Cassie: Okay fine. I'm going.

I almost couldn't believe I still had my job. I took a quick shower and changed into dark blue skinny jeans and white buttoned up shirt and white Snickers. I wasn't ready to wear knee length dresses or skirts. I applied liner and lip gloss and went downstairs. Everyone was on the dining table. I sat with Chris.

Mr Hunt: Aaahhhh.... There you are. Software department has become lazy without you.

Cassie: Are you sure Mr Hunt?

Mr Hunt: Of course Cassie. I know you can do it.

Cassie: Thank you. I'll do my best not to disappoint you.

Mr Hunt: I know you won't.

I couldn't imagine what I would do without Hunts. They helped me a lot in my life. But I was nervous, as if Chris just read my mind. He spoke.

Chris: I'll drop you Candy. Come on.

Cassie: Okay thanks.

We got up, bid our goodbyes and went to Chris' car.

Chris: Nervous??

Cassie: Yes!

Chris: Don't be. Think of it like the first day of your job.

Cassie: I'll try my best Chris.

Chris: Good girl.

Chris dropped me at the door and drove off. As I stepped in all eyes turned towards me. I tried to ignore them but I just couldn't. Thank God, right on the time Iris came to welcome me.

Iris: Welcome back. I'm glad you made it.

Cassie: Yeah, thanks.

Iris: You okay?

Cassie: Yeah, I'm fine.

Iris: I'm believing you. Now come, I'm going to show you your work.

Cassie: Thanks Iris.

Iris took me to my office. They have changed the whole interior of my office. Yes, I have missed a lot in the last 10 months. My phone pinged with a text message. I fished it out of my bag, it was Chris. Of course.

Chris: "Just hang in there Candy. You can do it."

I smiled, reading his text. I wanted to see him again, talk to him. I started to like every time he hugged me. It felt like nothing could happen to me whenever he hugs me. Iris texted me to inform me that the meeting will be held in 15 minutes and I have to be there to catch up with everything that I have missed. I stepped in the meeting hall and sat on my chair, reading my files. Soon the meeting hall was full of all people, and the meeting started. I thought it would take me a lot of time and effort to catch up with time that I have missed. But I was able to catch up with almost everything. "I guess my brain is still working perfectly." I thought. The first half of the meeting was over, it was lunch break, everyone went their ways but I got back to my office to talk to Chris. I wanted to tell him everything. So I dialed him and after the second ring, he picked up.

Cassie: " Hey."

Chris: "Hey. Someone is having a great time at work?"

Cassie: "Yeah, the day has been good so far, I'm able to catch up on almost everything."

Chris:" Well that's a good start."

Cassie: "Yeah, I guess."

Chris: "What is it Cassie?"

Cassie: "It's just.... Wherever I go, every eye follows me like I'm walking naked or something."

Chris: "People do that, don't worry about that. People like that ain't deserve your attention. You just focus on your work. I'll pick you up in the evening, okay?"

Cassie: "Okay. Thanks Chris."

Chris: "Just stay strong. I'll see you in the evening."

Cassie: "Bye Chris."

Chris: "Bye candy."

Talking to Chris calmed me a bit, I was excited to get back to the meeting. The first half went smoothly, now it was the time for the second half of the meeting. I had my lunch quickly in my office, as I was about to walk out of my office, Morgan, Alex, Olivier and Tom entered my office. "Shit. Not them, they're the worst in Hunt's Tech's." I thought as I sucked on my breath.

Alex: I feel so sorry for you Cassandra.

Morgan: You know you could just give him what he wanted. It wouldn't have done this much damage.

Cassie: I don't wanna talk to you guys.

Tom: Really Cassandra. I thought you would have learned your lesson. But no, you're still the old egoistic and arrogant Cassandra Wolf.

Cassie: I have to go for the meeting.

Olivier: Meeting! Why is she in that meeting?

Alex: Don't you know. Because she's Mr Hunt's favorite girl. His whore.

Tom: What?

Alex: I'm talking about Christopher Hunt. And now she's got Hendrick Black after her too. So she's a jackpot for Hunts.

Cassie: SHUT UP....

Tom: Shouting on us ain't gonna change the reality. You're a gold digger.

Olivier: No, not gold digger, she's a whore for Christopher Hunt and Hendrick Black.

Alex: Don't forget about Sam Peterson, that poor man thought she loved him.

I pushed past them. Iris was standing at the office door, too shocked to do something. I looked at her for a second and then ran. I ran towards the lift. I pushed the button for parking. Lift stopped on the parking floor. Thank God, I got a new car today from the company. I quickly unlocked my car, hopped in and drove off as fast as I could. "How could they even think like that about me. I've worked hard to earn my place. How cruel they are". I thought as I parked my car in the parking lot of my apartment. I was angry at Hendrick Black. I was angry at those kidnappers, I was angry at my fate. What have I ever done that my fate punished me like that. I unlocked the door of my apartment. Threw my stuff on the ground. I trashed everything I could get my hands on. Then I went to my closet and closed the door. I sat down on the floor, hugged my knees and sobbed for hours. Then suddenly, everything went dark.

IRIS'S POV:-

As I reached Cassie's office I saw the gossip squad of our company. I was shocked by what they have said to her. She looked at me for a moment with tears in her eyes then she ran towards the lift. I tried to follow her but the lift's door closed. I called the other lift and went straight to parking as I knew she got a car there. But until then I reached the parking floor she already drove off fast. I got scared. I quickly dialed Chris.

RING..... RING..... RING.....

Chris: "What is it Iris, make it quick, I have a lot of work."

Iris: "Chris! Something happened. It's Cassie."

Chris: "What about her?"

Iris: "Some jerks in here said a lot of cheap things to her, and she left."

Chris: "Left where? She doesn't even have a car!"

Iris: "She does Chris! Dad gave her a new car today. It was parked on the parking floor."

Chris: "You have got to be kidding me."

Iris: "Chris, she drove very fast and I'm worried about her what if...."

Chris: "Nothing will happen to her. I'm just leaving, I think I know where she could go but still. You better call mother and ask her if she's there."

Iris: "Okay. If you say so."

Chris: "Confirm it and tell me okay."

Iris: "Okay."

Chris hung up and I dialed my mom.

RING..... RING.... RING RING.....

Stella: "Yes honey."

Iris: "Mom. What took you so long to pick up my call."

Stella: "Slow down young lady. What is it?"

Iris: " Mom Is Cassie there?"

Stella: "No she is supposed to be with you at work."

Iris: "Shit. I'll call you back then mom."

Stella: "No tell me what happened?"

Iris: "Mom the world is so cruel, that's what happened. No one will ask a single question to Hendrick Black but Cassie is guilty for them because she wasn't born with a silver spoon in her mouth."

Stella: "Oh my God, where could she go?"

Iris: "Mom relax. Chris is on his way. He knows where she could go. He just wanted to be sure she isn't at the Villa."

Stella: "No no. She's not here."

Iris: "I have to tell Chris mom. I'll tell you everything."

Stella: "Okay I'll be waiting."

Iris: "Okay Mom bye."

Stella: "Bye."

I hung up and dialed Chris back.

Chris: "Yes."

Iris: "She's not at the Villa."

Chris: " Okay then, she's at her apartment. I'm almost there. I'll tell you as soon as I'll find her okay."

Iris: "Okay bye."

Chris: "Bye."

CHRIS'S POV:-

As Iris informed me that Cassie isn't at the Villa. I was confirmed that she will be at her apartment. I parked my car and went straight to her floor. I rang the bell several times and also banged the door hard enough that her neighbor came out.

Chris: Cassie I know you are here. Open the door.

I waited a bit but nothing.

Chris: Cassie, open the door or I'll break it.

Still no answer. I tried to find her spare keys but it wasn't at the place. The neighbor offered me help to reach her balcony.

Neighbor: Instead of breaking the door, use my balcony to jump on her balcony.

Chris: Yes thank you so much.

Neighbor: Okay then follow me.

She took me to her room's balcony which was attached to Cassie's room balcony. It wasn't hard for me to jump on her balcony. I tried to bang the glass door but nothing. I called her many times, she wasn't replying back. Now I started to get worried, all negative thoughts made their way to my head. I decided to break the glass. It took a few hard bangs but it finally broke. I got in and saw the whole apartment was trashed. "What if Hendrick Black was here? What if he kidnapped her again? What if he followed her?" I thought. I tried to find her. She wasn't in her room. I looked in the bathroom, it was empty too. I stepped out of her room, I looked everywhere, her study, her kitchen, living room, guest room, I even looked in the store room. But she was nowhere. I was so worried by then. "Maybe I should call Scott". My phone rang. I picked up without looking at the caller ID.

Chris: "Yes!"

Iris: "Did you find her?"

Chris: "I'm inside of her apartment, I looked everywhere Iris."

Iris: "Did you find her Chris?"

Chris: "No Iris. If I would have found her, I wouldn't be panicking like that. Her place I like trash. Her things are here but she's nowhere to be found."

Iris: "Oh my God Chris. What if Hendrick Black tried something again?"

Chris: "No! Oh my God please help me."

Cassie!!!! Where are you? Where the hell are you?

I thought.

CHAPTER 12

I was crazily looking everywhere. I searched her whole apartment twice, but nothing. I went back to her room to see what I have missed. And yes, I have missed one place to look, her closet. I opened the closet door and found her on the ground, sleeping. I sighed in relief, knowing that she's fine. I quickly dialled Iris. I knew my mother and Iris must be very worried by now.

Iris: "Tell me you found her and she's okay!"

Chris: "Yes. She is sleeping in her closet. I think she was crying and dosed off."

Iris: "Oh! Thank God she's fine."

Chris: "Tell mother and father. I'm gonna stay with her to make sure she is fine."

Iris: "Okay."

Chris: "And Iris."

Iris: "Yes"

Chris: "Don't disturb."

Iris: "Okay my cheesy brother, I won't."

Chris: "Shut up Iris."

Iris: "Okay okay. Fine. I won't."

I hung up, smiling. I went to the balcony and told her neighbor that I found her and she's fine. Also to thank her for the help. Then I went back to the closet. I caressed her cheek with the back of my hand. She slowly opened her eyes.

Cassie: Chris!!!!

CASSIE'S POV:-

I felt someone's caressing my cheek. I slowly, lazily opened my eyes and found Chris. Smiling weakly. "How did he know I would be here? How did he find me? Did he follow me?" I thought but all could say was.

Cassie: Chris!!!!

Chris: You scared the hell out of me Candy.

As he said those words and I started crying again. He wrapped his arms around me to comfort me a little. But It wasn't helping. I was sobbing hard. He scooped me up in his arms, stood up and carried me bridal style to my bed. I saw the glass of the sliding door was broken. He broke the glass to get in, as I used the spare keys of my apartment to get in. In the same position he sat on the bed with me on his lap. I put my head on his shoulder and was clutching his shirt by my hands. His head was on my head, one arm around me and with the other he was stroking my hair.

Chris: Why did you run away?

Cassie: I just didn't want to face anyone else.

Chris: You should have called me or waited for me.

Cassie: I'm sorry..

Chris: Shhhh..... It's okay. I'm here now. You're safe.

Cassie: He was right.

Chris: Who was right?

Cassie: Hendrick. He was right.

Chris: What did he say to you?

Cassie: He said I'll get nothing but pity from others. I am ruined and unacceptable.

He didn't say anything but tightened his hold on me. He kissed the top of my head. Just like that he laid down on the bed and I was on top of him.

Chris: You trust me?

Cassie: What do you mean Chris?

Chris: Do you trust me Cassie?

Cassie: Yes of course. I do, why?

Instead of answering me, he flipped us both in the bed. Now he was on top of me. I blushed hard. My heart was beating erratically in my chest.

Cassie: What are you doing?

Chris: What was left undone last night candy.

Cassie: Chris.....

My voice came out as a whisper.

Chris: I know Cassie.

He pecked my forehead, then he kissed both of my eyes one after the other. Then he kissed my cheeks. Then he kissed the tip of my nose then my chin. And then he pecked my lips. I gasped, he pecked my lips again and again until I gave in and kissed him back. I felt his lips curled up in a smile. He broke the kiss and said.

Chris: You were saying something candy?

He got up and went to untie all the curtains. Then he got rid of his tie. He kicked his shoes off and stripped off his shirt. He turned off all the lights of my room. Then He turned back to me with a smirk plastered on his face. He came to the bed then and laid beside me. Tingling feeling shot all over my body as he wrapped his arms around me again. We cuddle with each other. I inhaled his scent and he chuckled.

Cassie: What?

Chris: You seemed to like it a lot.

Cassie: Like what?

Chris: My scent....

My cheeks turned pink and I buried my face in his chest.

Chris: You know what. I like that very much.

Cassie: What?

Chris: Your blushing, embarrassed face.

He trailer his index finger from my collar bone up to my jawline.

Chris: The rosy pink color starts from here, from your shoulders, then through your neck it reaches to your cheeks, then ends up here on the tip of your nose.

By the end of his trail, my breaths were so loud in all quiet room. He chuckled again.

Cassie: It's not funny Chris.

Chris: No it's very very hot.

Cassie: Stop it.

Chris: Make me.

His voice was so deep and seductive. My heart beat was getting faster by every passing minute.

Cassie: You're enjoying it, aren't you?

Chris: So are you.

Cassie: No I'm not.

Chris: Oh you are...

He said and bit my lower lip. A gasp escaped my lips.

Cassie: I hate you.

Chris: Really.. but I love you.

I froze and looked back at him.

Cassie: What did you say?

Chris: I love you Cassie. You are an amazing person, your smile, your laugh. Your stubbornness, the care you showed to me and to everyone around you. In all those small loving moments I have fallen for you Cassie, hard. You can make me smile, you can make me laugh. You can make my worries and sorrows vanish.

I wrapped my arms around him as he kissed my forehead. I put my head back on his chest. I felt safe. I closed my eyes and drifted off.

CHRIS'S POV:-

I woke up at the sweet voice of the chirping birds. The room was dark. I looked at the beauty in my arms. She was sleeping peacefully, dreaming something that made her smile. I found it so cute that I couldn't stop myself from kissing her. I pecked her lips and earned back another cute smile. I rubbed the tip of my nose with her cheek and she slowly opened her eyes.

Chris: Good morning Candy.

Cassie: Good morning.

Chris: Did you sleep well?

Cassie: Yes and you?

Chris: Yep me too.

I kissed her forehead. She was blushing. Her face turned rosy pink again. I love the way she blushed every time I touched her or kissed her.

Cassie: Stop it Chris.

I smiled and kissed her cheek. She giggled. I held her close to me, she put her head back on my chest.

Cassie: Chris!

Chris: Hmmm.

Cassie: Did you mean it?

Chris: Mean what?

Cassie: Nothing, forget it.

I smiled, knowing exactly what she meant.

Chris: I know it's complicated. But I meant every single word I said to you. If you need time to think about it, you can take as long as you need. I'm not gonna push you or rush things.

She looked up at me smiling widely but that smile suddenly fell as I saw pain in her eyes.

Chris: What is it Cassie? Why the sad face.

Cassie: I'm not good for you Chris.

Chris: What? Why would you even say anything like that?

Cassie: Because I'm impure and you deserve someone better and pure.

Chris: I am also divorced.

Cassie: Yeah but you weren't.....

I cut her in the middle sentence with a kiss. I hold her close to me. Close enough to tell her that I don't care and it doesn't matter. , but I love her. Hendrick might have taken her innocence but her heart, her feelings, her emotions and her soul were still pure. So it doesn't matter for me what happened to her. It wasn't her fault. For me she was still my pure and innocent Cassie. I broke the kiss and wiped her tears by my thumbs.

Chris: Cassie, whatever happened with you, wasn't your fault. You are innocent. None of us had any idea that it could happen. So I don't care what happened. The past is in the past. Cassie, love is senseless. The only thing made sense in love is actually Love. Love is pure but impure as well. Love is weakness but strength as well. Love is hard but soft as well. Love is crazy and confusing and doesn't make any sense. But love is the only emotion in this world that doesn't need to make sense.

Hearing this she smiled and kissed my palm that was touching her lips slightly. She tried to say something but instead she wrapped her arms around my waist. I did the same. I wrapped one arm around her waist and rubbed her back in circular motion by the other.

Cassie: I love you too.

Chris: What? Say that again!

Cassie: I love you too Chris. I love you too. And I don't think I can live without you.

Hearing her words. I felt my heart warmed up with all the emotions. I tightened my arms around her. She gasped and spoke.

Cassie: Chris! I can't breathe.

I smiled and ease her in my arms. I was happy. After decades, I was finally happy. When I married Emma, my happinesses, my smiles and my emotions, all disappeared. She turned my life in hell and took away my happinesses. But the moment Cassie came in my life, it all changed. I got hope, I started smiling again, I got my emotions back. One simple science girl changed my life again. I pinched her chin and guided her gaze to my eyes.

Chris: I promise you Cassie. I will bring all the happinesses to you. I will try my best to make your dreams come true. I will give you everything you have ever dreamed of.

She smiled and pecked my lips.

Cassie: Everything I want or need, is right here in front of me.

Chris: What?

Cassie: It's you dummy.

She smiled and I wrapped my arms around her again.

CASSIE'S POV:-

He wrapped his arms around me again. To be honest, it felt so good. I was happy. And I wasn't scared anymore. Ever since I've been kidnapped, I even got scared if someone called me from behind. It felt so amazing. The feeling of someone loving you unconditionally, was so good. I didn't know why but I was thankful to God that Hendrick Black kidnapped me. Or I'll be with that sick stupid Sam. I wanted to spend my whole life in Chris' arms. I wasn't worried or scared anymore. I was happy.

Cassie: So are we planning to stay here, in my bed all day?

Chris: That's a good idea. Don't you think?

Cassie: Iris will eat me alive.

Chris: Not when she'll get what she wants to hear from us.

Cassie: Don't you dare tell her all that.

Chris smiled and kissed me again. The feeling was amazing. And I didn't want it to end.

CHAPTER 13

CHRIS' POV:-

Time passed, everything started to get normal. Cassie was getting strong and confident again. We decided to keep our relationship to ourselves for a while until we figured everything out. My life was changing and I was happy after a very long time. After Emma, I wasn't looking for any relationship or wife in my future. But when I met Cassie it all changed. It was our routine, I drop her for work then pick her up every evening and we go to her apartment to have a little time together. Scott and Iris knew about it. Iris wouldn't shut up so we decided to tell her everything about our relationship. Besides, she always covered for us in front of our parents. We were on our way to Cassie's apartment. She was humming "My Love of Westlife." I love the sound of her humming that song. I find it really cute. I parked the car and turned to face Cassie.

Cassie: Don't give me that look. I know what is going on in your head.

Chris: Really. Then tell me what am I thinking right now?

Cassie: No. I'm not that crazy you know.

She opened the car door and got out. I got out as well, locked the car and followed her. Once we were in the elevator, I caged her between my arms. She gulped nervously and looked at me. Her breathing was fast. I could hear her heart too, drumming hard and fast in her chest. I smiled and rubbed the tip of my nose with her cheek. I heard the elevator ding. I grabbed her hand and led her to her apartment. She unlocked her apartment. As soon as we stepped inside I pulled her in a long loving hug. She also wrapped her arms around me and inhaled deeply.

Cassie: Thanks. I needed that.

Chris: Is everything okay Candy?

Cassie: Yes! I just needed this hug. That's all

Chris: Okay. But you know I'm always here to listen to whatever you have to say or bother you.

Cassie: I know.

She pecked my lips and we stayed like this for a while. Then she pulled back and went to Kitchen to prepare us some coffee and cookies. I got rid of my tux jacket and my tie. I was rolling up my sleeves when I heard a whistle. I turned to look at her, she was drooling over me with a wide grin on her face. I smirked at her and her face turned a rosy pink. I laughed, knowing I'm the reason for her blushing face.

Cassie: You did that on purpose, didn't you?

Chris: You are the one who has started it. I'm all innocent here.

Cassie: You rolled up your sleeves first.

Chris: I can strip it off if that's what you want?

Cassie: I enjoy that show every night.

Chris: Is that so lovely?

We sat on the couch together, enjoying our coffee and happy chats. After an hour or so I received a text message from Iris.

Iris: "Mom wants you both at home. Come home."

Chris: " Why? Is everything okay?"

Iris: Everything's okay. Just come back home or we all are in trouble."

Chris: "Okay. We're on our way."

I turned to Cassie who just walked out of the kitchen.

Chris: We need to go back home, Cassie.

Cassie: Why?

Chris: I don't know. But we better leave right now.

Cassie: Okay. Let me lock my room.

She locked her room, turned off all the lights, picked up my tie and jacket as I took the keys to lock the apartment. We drove back home. She put her head on my shoulder as I just drove in complete silence. Once we reached home I grabbed my stuff and we got out of the car. We made our way to the Villa. I was looking at my phone when I heard Cassie's scream, I looked around only to find her father standing there, arms wide open for his daughter.

CASSIE'S POV:-

As soon as we stepped into the Villa, I saw my father. He looked at me and I screamed. Chris tensed up but then he realized that I screamed because my father was there. He opened his arms wide for me and I ran to him, jumped on him, wrapping my arms and legs around him.

David Wolf: Slow down or you'll hurt yourself.

Cassie: I've missed you so much.

David Wolf: How are you?

Cassie: I'm fine dad. How are you?

David Wolf: I'm fine and I missed you too. So I thought it's time to visit you.

Cassie: Love you Dad.

Stella: Aren't you gonna invite him in? He's been standing out here for you since he had arrived. Let's go, dinner is served.

We all sat together and had our dinner in peace. After dinner I talked to my dad for a while then he went back to the hotel he was staying in. Mr. Hunt tried a lot to convince dad to stay with us but he had some work to do so he left. I went back to my room and took a long hot shower. Then I changed into a loose shirt and tides. I walked out of the closet and almost screamed. I saw Chris, lying on my bed. He was looking so hot in a t-shirt and trousers.

Cassie: Jeez, you scared me. Will you ever knock before coming in?

Chris: Nah. Come here.

Cassie: No.

Chris: So you're in a mood to fight.

He stood up and slowly started to walk towards me. I kept stepping back until my back hit the wall. He was standing right in front of me, he put his hands on either side of me. He trapped me between his arms and the wall. He started to lean in and I closed my eyes. I opened them again when he kissed my forehead. He was smirking at me, knowing his effects on me. Then he carried me bridal style to the bed. He gently laid me down on the bed then he laid beside me. He wrapped his arms around me and I welcomed his warmth.

Chris: Close your eyes and sleep.

Cassie: No. I don't want to sleep.

Chris: Why not?

Cassie: I just wanna stay like this a little longer.

Chris: What are you thinking?

Cassie: Nothing.

He kissed my forehead and I buried my face in his chest. He rubbed my back soothingly in a circular motion. I tried so hard not to fall asleep but I eventually fell asleep.

I opened my eyes slowly. It was dawn. Chris was there too. I looked at him and he smiled.

Chris: Good morning.

Cassie: Good morning.

Chris: Did you sleep well?

Cassie: Yes! And you?

Chris: How can't I? When I have a pretty woman beside me!

I just smiled at him, I knew my cheeks were pink again.

Chris: I better get out of your room or we can get caught.

Cassie: Get caught! Are we doing something wrong? Is it a sin?

I saw he opened his mouth to say something but shut it eventually. Then he got up and left my room. I felt like I said something I shouldn't have, but I wanted to know where we stand. But his silence, it hurt me. I felt pain in my chest. I got up as well and went to take a long hot shower. After the shower, I changed into blue skinny jeans and a yellow t-shirt. I dried my hair and tied them up in a high ponytail. I wore my shoes and left my room. I went downstairs, my eyes were searching for Chris who was nowhere to be found. I entered the dining hall and was welcomed by the aroma of freshly baked muffins. "If there would be any kingdom of bakers then Stella must be the queen of that kingdom." I thought as I made my way to the dining table. I sat beside Iris.

Iris: Are you going somewhere?

Cassie: Yep. Dad and daughter day out. He's coming to pick me up and we'll spend the whole day together.

Iris: Cute.

I had my breakfast just as I finished my coffee I heard the honk indicated that my father had arrived. I grabbed my phone and got out of the Villa. I walked to him and wrapped my arms around him. My dad did the same.

David Wolf: I've missed this.

Cassie: What do you mean?

David Wolf: Cassie, I don't know. I just feel you should come back to DC with me.

Cassie: Dad, I'm fine.

David Wolf: I don't know. After whatever happened, it'd scared me.

Cassie: Dad, I'm fine and as promised, I'm taking self-defense classes.

David Wolf: If you say so but I'm not sure you should be living here after that incident.

Cassie: Dad, you said a fun day out. Right now, you're just giving me a long lecture which is so boring.

David Wolf: Alright then. Get in, we have a lot of fun and so many things to do and we just have a few hours only.

Cassie: Are you going back today?

David Wolf: Yes I have to get back by tomorrow morning.

Cassie: Okay then. Let's go.

My dad drove for about an hour and parked the car in front of a shopping mall.

Cassie: Seriously. A shopping mall?

David Wolf: What? I know you like shopping.

Cassie: Dad, we ain't do shopping together, we have fun together.

David Wolf: Yeah I know. But I thought maybe a little change is needed today.

Cassie: Dad, I'm fine.

David Wolf: Really! You barely spoke a word on our way here.

Cassie: Dad, it's nothing. I'm okay. I just missed you a lot, maybe that's why.

David Wolf: I want to believe you.

Cassie: Yeah, let's just go.

David Wolf: you said you don't want to go shopping.

Cassie: But we're already here and I'm emptying your wallet today.

David Wolf: We'll see that.

CHRIS'S POV:-

Cassie: Get caught, are we doing something wrong? Is it a sin?

She asked me and I looked at her. I tried to say something but nothing came out of my mouth. I got up and left her room. I took a quick shower, changed in my casual jeans and t-shirt and went out of the Villa. I didn't even bother to have something for breakfast. I wasn't hungry anymore. I got into

my car and drove off. I kept driving for an hour or so then I parked my car in front of a park. I was walking slowly on the tracks, lost deeply in my thoughts, I went to a bench and sat on it. I was pulled out of my thoughts when I heard someone giggling near me. There was a couple sitting there, talking to each other. They were old, but the man was older than the woman. The old man left and the woman turned to me.

Old woman: What's your name young man?

Chris: Christopher Hunt ma'am.

Old woman: I'm Mallory Stevenson. You can call me Mell.

Chris: Okay then you can call me Chris.

Mallory: So, what's troubling you so much? If you would like to talk about it?

Chris: Oh it's fine. But what do you mean?

Mallory: It's written all over your face.

I was shocked, she just read my face. Is it easy to read my face?

Mallory: Is it about a girl?

Chris: Yes, it is about a girl.

Mallory: Is she your girlfriend?

Chris: I don't know.

Mallory: What does that suppose to mean?

Chris: I'm not sure about it. It's complicated.

Mallory: Why? Do you not have feelings for her?

Chris: I do, I love her, for years.

Mallory: Does she not love you back?

Chris: She does too. She confessed it.

Mallory: Then what is complicated here, young man? If you both love each other then it shouldn't be complicated.

Chris: The age difference between us. I think we won't work with this much difference between us.

Mallory: How much difference are we talking about?

Chris: 12 years. She's 12 years younger than me.

She laughed and I got confused.

Mallory: Oh sorry about that. Are you sure 12 years can create complications between two lovers? Look at us, my husband is 18 years older than me. But we are married and we are really happy.

Chris: How many years have you both spent together?

Mallory: 39 years.

Chris: Really! I thought you are a newly wedded couple.

Mallory: Oh no, we married 39 years ago. We'd had our hard times but we eventually got together and we are happy. Do you wanna know our story?

Chris: Why not, please.

CHAPTER 14

Chris: Why not! Please, do tell.

Old man: My dear chatty wife. What's going on?

Mallory: Christopher, meet my husband Ian Stevenson. And Ian this is chr...

Ian: Christopher Hunt. The one and only.

Mallory: you know him?

Ian: Of course I know him.

Chris: I'm sorry, but how?

Ian: I've worked for your father. And people who know your father, they know you as well, as your father talks about you a lot.

Chris: I don't know a lot about the company and the employees.

Ian: I know that.

Mallory: He wants to know our story.

Ian: Haha! I'm not surprised. It's a magical story. Do you believe in magic and fantasies?

Chris: No I don't actually.

Ian: You will. By the end of our story you will believe in magic. But we can't tell you our story here, in public. You have to come with us to our home and then we'll tell you our story with tea and cupcakes.

Mallory: Don't mind him son. He's so possessive about our story. He keeps it well hidden.

Chris: I can understand. It must be so close to your heart.

Ian: It is, young man, Very. So you're coming?

Chris: I'm right behind you.

We walked to the parking area, they got into their car and I stepped into mine. They drove off and I followed them behind. The moment they told me they are also a couple with an age gap, but happy in their life, a flicker of hope made its way to my heart. I wanted to know everything about them. Their story, their life, their relationship and their wedding. I have witnessed their happiness. After a 5 minutes drive, I parked my car in front of a small but beautiful house. They invited me in

and I followed. Ian took me to the living room and Mallory made her way to the kitchen. Ian showed me all the pictures, framed on the wall. They are really a happy couple. Wall was full of photos. There were few pictures belonging to some young people, who must be their children. But most of the pictures belonged to the couple. About 10 minutes later, Mallory came with tea and cupcakes.

Ian: Now tell me young man. What do you want to know?

Chris: Everything. How did you meet? How did you fall for each other? How did you get together?

Ian: I have been living here since I was born. My father gifted this house to my mother as a gift. I have an older brother, but he lives in L.A with his family. He left New York for his higher studies and career. But I stayed here with my parents as they were old and needed someone to take care of them. I didn't get married, I wanted to do everything for them by myself. Then one day, about 40 years ago, Luke's family came and got settled in our neighborhood. My mother loved to bake and gift it to her neighbors as a welcome.

Mallory: My parents bought that house for me. I never liked the life of an apartment. We came here, in this town. Mr. and Mrs. Stevenson were very welcoming. I can remember, it was our second day here and Mrs Stevenson brought us a pie. In a short time my parents and I got attached with Mr and Mrs Stevenson, we even celebrated occasions together. We were new here in this neighborhood but Ian's parents made us feel like we're living here for ages. My mom was out of the city. She went to her parents for a week and I stayed with my father. One day, I came back home from school and found my dad on the floor, fighting for life. He had an asthmatic attack. I didn't know what to do, his inhaler wasn't working on him. I ran to Ian's house for help.

Ian: She knocked and I opened the door. She was crying and shaking in fear. She told me her father's condition. We both ran to her place and I called the ambulance.

Mallory: I called my mom and told her everything. She asked Ian to stay with me until she comes. He stayed with me. He took care of my dad and also comforted me. Those few hours care he showed, in all those moments. I didn't even know when, but I fell for him hard.

Ian: The moment I got out of the hospital as her mother had arrived, I knew something had changed. But I was being realistic, just like any other men could be. I thought we have almost two decades between us, we would never gonna work. Plus I wasn't interested in her. She was a kid in front of me. I ignored her and her calls. She used to visit our house daily. I avoided meeting her as well because I didn't want to give her any sign that I'm into her or we have anything between us. But she was so stubborn. The more I tried to push her away, the more she came closer.

Mallory: It's hard when you love someone more than yourself, ignores you or pushes you away. But I made up my mind and promised myself that he will be mine and I will only marry him.

Ian: In all those push and pull, I fell for her too, harder than I could ever believe. But I was an egoistic man, how could I accept my defeat, and that too against a girl. I made up my mind to push her hard enough so she would hate me.

Mallory: It was his birthday, Mrs Stevenson invited me too. I went to his house. I can still remember that day. I went to his birthday party, I was really happy. I gave him the gift I made for him. He tore the wrapper. I shivered in fear seeing him angry.

Ian: It was a wooden heart, carved by her and our names on that. I could tell, I knew she could carve wood pieces. I have seen it in her house and she is good at it.

Mallory: He took it out and showed it to his friends. He insulted me in front of everyone. He threw it on the ground and yelled at me, like my love, my feelings, my emotions were nothing to him but a piece of crap.

Ian: I saw tears in her eyes. I was yelling at her and she clapped her hands on her mouth, tight enough to block her sobs. She ran back to her house.

Mallory: I ran to my house and went straight to my room. I locked myself in and cried. I cried the whole night. Everything he had said to me, his words kept playing in my head again and again. There was an ache in my chest, my heart and by every passing moment it was increasing. I cried until I didn't know when, but I fell asleep.

Ian: She left the party, I finally succeeded in pushing her away. But instead of feeling happy, I felt an ache in my chest. I had seen her crying before when her father was in the hospital. But this time I was the reason of her tears. I stared at her while she ran away sobbing hard. I picked up the wooden heart she brought me and dismissed everyone. I went to my room and laid on my bed. I kept twisting and turning on my bed the whole night but couldn't sleep for a second. It was dawn, I got up and went to make myself a cup of coffee. It was weekend. I knew by morning that I'm in love with her more than she is. I heard a knock on the door, I opened it. It was Mr Luke. He asked me to look after his daughter as they both had work on weekend and Mallory had fever. I agreed to take care of her and they both left. I finished my coffee and went to her house.

Mallory: I opened my eyes when I heard footsteps coming to my room. I thought it would be my dad but it was Ian who opened the door of my room. My parents actually left me with the last person on Earth I wanted to see. All those emotions and aches welled up and turned in anger. He stepped into my room and I picked up everything around me and started throwing in his directions.

Ian: That day I saw her madness. She even threw a photo frame on my head. It hit me hard. But I deserved it. I had hurt her.

Mallory: He came close to me and sat at the edge of my bed. He grabbed my wrists and pulled me to him. I was slapping and punching his chest and his face. Then he said something that made me freeze in his arms. He apologized to me and finally confessed his love to me.

Ian: I denied my feelings for her so long. I was scared of the world, scared of what people will say. Just like you.

Chris: How do you know?

Mallory: 5 minutes are enough for me to tell him that you also have the same story and same problems like us.

Ian: Christopher, listen to me. I was also worried about people. But can you bare tears in her eyes just because of this stupid world? I know, people will talk for some time, then they will get another topic for their gossip but your pain will be permanent. Can you see her eyes filled with tears because of you?

Chris: No I can't.

Mallory: Then don't think too much. Just let it happen.

Ian: Both of our families stood against us. My brother, who hardly gets time to call his parents, flew back just to stand against our relationship. We were alone in this fight, but we were stronger than all of them. We fought for our lives, for our love, and if I'm being honest, it was hard.

Mallory: When my parents came to know that I'm in love with a guy who's 18 years older than me they tried to tie me up with my cousin. But God was with us. I turned 18 and we stubbornly married to each other. We both got kicked out of our houses. Our families didn't accept us at all.

Ian: That's when your father became an angel in our lives. I had been working for Hunts for 11 years by the time we got married. Mr Hunt is a really nice man. He recently became CEO that time. I told him my problem and he gave me his apartment. I also got a raise.

Mallory: A year after our wedding, we went back to our families with a baby in my arms. We proved everyone wrong. You can do it too.

Ian: But son, she can't fight without you. Women are stronger than us men. But they need support from us. Be the same support for her as I became to my wife. If your father can understand us, he will understand you both as well. Look at us, we have kids. They have their own lives. They are happy and so are we.

Mallory: I couldn't have fought this world without Ian. He is my strength, he stood by me and fought this battle together. In a year we were able to defeat everyone, we proved everyone wrong.

Ian: A woman can fight the whole world easily if you are there for her to support her. Now it's up to you, to fight for the love of your life as a man or leave it like a coward.

I listened to both of them. They both were right. I have to fight for my love. I stood up with a smile.

Chris: You both easily solved all the problems in my life. She asked me today, "are we committing a sin?" It's time for her question to be answered. I'm not a coward. I will fight for my love.

Ian: Now how are you planning to do that?

Chris: I guess like you, with an apology I owe her.

Mallory: And how will you apologise to her.

Chris: Just like Mr Stevenson.

Mallory: It wasn't just an apology but a promise. Before his apology, he wrapped his arms around me and held me like I meant the world to him. Every single word he said to me that day, were coming straight from his heart. You need to find your own way to reach her. We all have a special thing we do. A moment, a habit that consoles us, makes all our fears vanish, eases all the pains in our hearts. I'm sure you both have something special too. You need to find that moment, that habit, that always brought comfort to you both, or I can say that has brought you both together.

Chris: I think I know what you both are talking about. We do have that particular moment that brought us together.

Ian: Tell me what is it?

Chris: It was a kiss that brought us together. It all started with a kiss.

Mallory: Go and tell her that she meant the world to you. I have seen it in your eyes Christopher, now it's her time to see it as well. Go and tell her that she is not alone in this fight. That you are with her and you both will fight for your love.

Chris: Thank you Mr and Mrs Stevenson. I promise you both I will fight and soon I will visit you again with her.

Ian: Go get her boy, good luck.

CHAPTER 15

After talking with Mallory and Ian, I went to different shops to buy flowers, sandwiches, cupcakes, cookies and lanterns. I wanted to make our first date magical for her. I wanted her to feel it, I wouldn't use my words, but my actions would tell her how much I love her. After all the arrangements, I went back to my home, took a quick shower, changed into casual jeans and t shirt then I just waited for her to be back home.

CASSIE'S POV:-

Me and my dad spent the whole day together. We went shopping, then we watched his favorite action movie, then we had lunch. It was evening, we were in a cafe, enjoying coffee and cookies. I almost forgot everything that had happened this morning. I was still sad but my father brought a smile at my face. I was still quiet but not like in the morning.

My dad tapped on the table and I looked at him with a smile.

David Wolf: Are you okay?

Cassie: Yeah! I'm perfect.

David Wolf: Did you have fun today?

Cassie: Of course I did. You're always fun to be around.

David Wolf: Buttering your own father eh?

Cassie: I'm not buttering you, I will rather use chocolate.

David Wolf: So how is your work?

Cassie: It's good.

David Wolf: You know Iris told me what happened 2 weeks ago.

Cassie: God! She's becoming your agent.

David Wolf: Cassie! No more keeping things from each other, you promised me.

Cassie: I know dad.

David Wolf: Then tell me, why did you convince Mr Hunt to call them back?

Cassie: Dad, I'm Cassandra Wolf, daughter of David Wolf. Whatever had happened in the past, is and will be in the past. I'm not scared of people's questioning eyes and pity talks anymore. I'm your daughter, and I will stand up again with my dignity and pride.

David Wolf: Oh yeah! Then let's talk about the case.

Cassie: Dad please! I told you we are never going to discuss this. Not now, not ever.

David Wolf: What if things that happened to you, will happen to someone else, what will you do? Because that time, you'll be responsible too.

Cassie: Dad please! I don't want to see his face ever in my life again. Let me live my life peacefully. It's hard not to remember the time I've spent in that hell with the devil. The scars he has given me, it will be with me till death. It's never gonna heal and will pain me forever. It's hard to learn to live with a scar like that. I can bear this scar but I don't want to see his face ever again. I don't even want to hear his voice or his name again in my life.

David Wolf: Okay okay! We'll do as you wish. Don't get upset. Finish your coffee.

Cassie: Thanks dad.

We finished our coffees, my dad paid and we left the cafe. My dad drove me back to Hunt's Villa. My dad hugged me and pecked my forehead. He handed me all the stuff I bought, Then drove off. I stared at his car for a while then I turned, only to bump into Chris.

Cassie: Sorry, I didn't see.....

I wasn't able to complete my sentence because Chris' lips were on mine. He kissed me. I dropped everything on the ground and held his shoulders for support. His tongue slid into my mouth. His mouth tasted like chocolate and mint. He had kissed me before but those were more like pecks on my lips, but nothing like this. He was exploring my mouth and I could feel his emotions and love. I closed my eyes and intertwined my fingers in his soft sandy hair. World around me vanished and I kissed him back. He broke the kiss, my eyes were still closed.

Chris: Look at me Cassie.

He ordered me and I obliged. I opened my eyes and looked straight in his eyes. He cupped my face and said.

Chris: I love you. It's neither a crime, nor a sin. I love you and I'm not afraid of anyone. You're mine, and I will fight for what's mine.

My eyes welled up with his confession. He wrapped his arms around me and I welcomed his warmth. I put my head on his chest, I could hear the sweet melody of his heart. (I missed this all

day, I've missed him, his warmth all day.) I thought. All day I was so worried that I've said something that will end everything between us but here we are, together again.

Chris: Are you free now?

Cassie: Yes, why?

Chris: Go and get ready. I'm waiting for you here.

Cassie: Where are we going?

Chris: You'll see.

I quickly picked up all the shopping bags and went to my room. I took a quick shower and changed into white knee length dress my dad bought for me. I applied eyeliner and lip gloss. I was wearing my shoes when Iris hugged me from behind.

Iris: I'm so happy for you. Finally he made his decision. He finally spoke for both of you.

Cassie: Took him long enough, but it was all worth the wait.

Iris: Hurry up or he will change his mind.

Cassie: How do I look?

Iris: Beautiful for me and sexy for him.

Cassie: I shouldn't have asked you.

We both hugged each other and I went downstairs. Chris looked at me and gulped. I giggled on his reaction.

Chris: Let's go.

We made our way to his car. He opened the door like a gentleman, I stepped into the car. Then he got into the car and drove off. I tried to ask him many times but he didn't give me a single clue about the so-called surprise he had planned for me. After about two hours of driving, he finally parked the car in the woods. I gave him an annoyed look and he chuckled.

Chris: Just follow me, you're gonna love it.

He held my hand and we started walking. We walked for about 5 minutes or so when I saw something was glowing in the dark woods. In a minute we finally reached the spot. It was breathtaking. He decorated the whole place with flowers and lanterns. There was a rug on the ground with a bucket. He planned a picnic.

Chris: Do you like it?

Cassie: I love it. How and when did you plan all this?

Chris: Don't underestimate me Cassie.

We sat on the ground, he opened the bucket. It was full of cookies, cupcakes and sandwiches. We ate and chatted.

Cassie: You really put an effort to this.

Chris: Yeah! I've baked these cookies for you.

Cassie: Wait, really! You baked these for me?

Chris: No, I was joking. I bought them from your favorite cafe.

Chris: I hate you.

Chris: oh yeah.

He said as he pulled me to him. I was so close to him that I could count his lashes. My heart was drumming in my chest and my breaths were heavy too.

Chris: Now say that again what you've said before.

Cassie: You're so mean. Now back off, I want to enjoy my picnic.

Chris: That's not a picnic Cassie, it's a date.

Cassie: Wait what? A date???

Chris: Do you have any doubts?

Cassie: I just want to hear you say that.

He cupped my neck by both of his hands, his thumbs were caressing my cheeks. He looked in my eyes and said.

Chris: We both care about each other. I like you, you like me as well. Then why not. I'm willing to give this relationship a chance, to see how far we can go. And believe me Cassie, we will have a perfect life together. I don't give a damn to this world. All I care about is the smile that appears on your face every time when I wrap my arms around you. I know it's gonna be hard, but we will cross that bridge, we will cross it together. I am with you, you're not alone in this.

He pecked my forehead and I closed my eyes to feel his lips on my forehead. I wasn't sure about how my dad will react when he'll know that Chris and I are together. I didn't want to hurt him, but I didn't want to lose Chris as well. But I knew I wasn't alone. He was with me and that's all that matters to me.

Chris: Are you ready to face the world for us?

Cassie: I can fight the whole world as long as you are with me and I have your love and support.

Chris: Then I'm with you .

Cassie: .

CHAPTER 16

IRIS' POV:-

Chris and Cassie left for their very first date. I was really happy for them. Finally they both are together. That's all matter to me, happinesses of my brother and my best friend. I turned around and found my mom glaring at me. I smiled and asked her.

Iris: What?

Stella: You knew about it all, didn't you?

Iris: I don't know what you're talking about?

Stella: Iris, I'm asking you something.

Liam: Please don't kill my daughter Stella.

Stella: What's wrong with you Liam. You and I both know how much age difference they have. They won't work.

Liam: And how do you know that they won't work?

Stella: You and I both have seen this world. They are kids. I have never heard of anything like this work longer.

Liam: This is new to you but for me, it's a deja Vu.

Stella: What do you mean by deja Vu?

Liam: Just have a little faith in both of them. They know what they are doing. Don't judge them too early.

I thought it would be better to leave my father to convince my mom. I knew only dad could make her understand. Chris and Cassie were the cutest couple I've ever seen. They fight each other, they tease each other, they cry together and they laugh together as well. Chris never opened up with anyone, none of us knew Chris from inside but for Cassie, he's been an open book. She knows him, inside out. I went back to my room and stripped my clothes off. I went to the bathroom and took a long warm bath. As the hot water touched my body, I felt all my tensed muscles relaxed. After a 30 minutes long bath and relaxation, I grabbed a towel, dried my body, then wrapped it on my body. After covering my body and head with towels I went back to my room. As I walked out of the bathroom, someone grabbed me and pushed me to the wall. I would have screamed if I wouldn't

have recognized the person by his scent. It was Scott. He covered my mouth with one hand to block my screams.

Scott: Calm down lovely. You won't scream and I'll make sure these towels won't hit the ground.

Iris: Ummmmmmmm....

Scott: What?

I pointed my finger to his hand that was on my mouth, then he came to understand what I was trying to say.

Scott: Sorry.

Iris: What the hell is wrong with you? What are you doing here?

Scott: I missed you. You weren't answering your phone. So I thought a little surprise would not hurt.

Iris: Your little surprise scared the hell out of me.

Scott: Okay fine. I'm sorry. I wanted to see you.

Iris: How did you get in my room? I've locked the door.

Scott: No you haven't.

Iris: Scott, don't you dare lie to me. I know you very well.

Scott: Alright fine. I climbed through the window.

Iris: What?

Scott: What could I do? Your mom was yelling at your dad. So I decided to use the window instead of your door. By the way, why is she yelling at your dad?

Iris: Chris kissed Cassie in front of everyone one and confessed his love too. Now they both are on date and my mom is fuming down stairs.

Scott: He did what?

Iris: Why are you so shocked? Sooner or later this was going to happen.

Scott: Yeah but I thought they were avoiding the public.

Iris: Yes but how far they could have gone with that. I'm happy that Chris finally made his decision.

Scott: And how did Cassie react to all this?

Iris: She was shocked like you. I don't know what changed his mind but I'm happy for both of them. They deserve a happy life.

Scott: Me too.

Scott's phone rang and he picked it up.

Scott: "Agent Lu. Yes yes okay..... where..... what..... okay fine send me the location I'm on my way."

Saying that he cut the call and looked at me again.

Scott: Sorry babe. I gotta go now. But I will come back to have a little moment with you.

He pecked my lips and climbed down from my window.

CHRIS' POV:-

After our first date, we drove back to my Villa. Cassie's eyes were shining with hope again. She was happy after so long. I didn't tell her anything about Mr and Mrs Stevenson. We reached the Villa, stepped out of the car and walked together. As we stepped into the Villa I heard my mother yelling. She was the most calmed person I've ever known. Cassie held my hand tightly and spoke.

Cassie: Chris!

Chris: It's okay Candy. You go to your room. I'll talk to them.

Cassie: Are you sure. I can come with you, we are in this together.

I pecked her forehead to assure her that it's fine.

Chris: I'll be fine. You go to your room. I'll see you in a bit. Don't worry too much. It's gonna be okay.

She smiled and pecked my cheek. Then she left and I went to the kitchen where my parents were arguing about my relationship.

Stella: It's not gonna do any good to anyone Liam. She had been through a lot and so was Chris. I don't want any of them to get through any sort of pain ever again.

Liam: you're overreacting.

Stella: Mark my word. You all will regret this decision.

She said and exited the kitchen without sparing me a single glance. I never thought she would react like that. But I couldn't blame her. She cared for both me and Cassie. My father looked at me with a smile and said.

Liam: Come with me son. We need to talk.

We went to the dining table and sat together. My father patted my shoulder and asked.

Liam: Are you okay son?

Chris: I'm fine dad. Don't worry about me.

Liam: I am your father Christopher. It's my duty to worry about you, to take care of you. No matter how old you have gotten, you're still my young boy. And I worry because I love you.

Chris: I know dad. Thank you for everything you have done for me. I just wasn't expecting her to react like this.

Liam: Don't worry about her. She'll be fine. You tell me, do you love her?

Chris: Of course dad, I do. You know me I'm not that player kind. It took me long enough to realize but I know she's the one for me.

CHAPTER 17

Liam: Do you love her?

Chris: Yes dad, I do. It took me long to realize but I love her and I can't live without her.

Liam: And what about Cassie?

Chris: She does too.

Liam: If you both feel the same way about each other, then I'm with you.

Chris: Thank you dad for understanding.

Liam: Don't thank me, I'm just doing what I have to. Now tell me, I will take care of your mother and she will be fine, but what about Mr Wolf?

Chris: Honestly dad, I don't know.

Liam: Take my advice, tell him as soon as you can.

Chris: Yeah, thanks Dad. I'll see what I have to do.

CASSIE'S POV:-

I did as Chris told me. I went to my bedroom, took a long shower, then changed into a loose shirt and tides. I laid on my bed waiting for Chris. He came in and ast on the edge of the bed, I also sat up, he looked so much tired. I went to him and hugged him from behind. He grabbed my hands and made me sit besides him. He intertwined his fingers with mine and I smiled. He then spoke in a tired voice.

Chris: Dad's with us, he will take care of mom. But until then, we have to keep a bit distance.

Cassie: I can understand Chris and I'm with you.

I said it and squeezed his hand a bit to assure him that he's not alone. He wrapped his arm around me and I welcomed his warmth. My phone began to ring. I looked at it, it was my dad. I picked it up and asked him.

Cassie: "What's up Dad?"

David Wolf: "Are you up or did I wake you up?"

Cassie: "No no, I'm still up. Why?"

David: "I'm coming to pick you up. We're going to stay together tonight."

Cassie: "Wait, you're still here?"

David Wolf: "Yeah. I decided to stay for a night. Get ready, I'll be there in an hour. Okay?"

Cassie: "Okay, see you, love you."

David Wolf: "Bye."

Cassie: "Bye."

I cut the call and told Chris about my dad's plan. Chris kissed my forehead and left me to get ready. I quickly changed into jeans and t-shirt and waited for my dad to arrive.

After an hour, my dad came. I hopped in his car and we drove off. My dad took me to the hotel he was staying in. My dad played my favorite movie and we enjoyed it together. My dad and I were more attached to each other. I can be old but for my father, I was still a baby. We both laid on the bed and enjoyed the movie. My mom really never cared about me, Katy was her favorite child. Katy was the rebellious one and I was the one who followed rules. My dad knew me very well, that's why I got the permission to get settled in New York.

We were enjoying the movie when all the things and reactions Stella gave us came into my mind. (I love Chris but I also can't live without my dad. If Stella gave us that kind of reaction, what will my dad do? What if he said no? What if his reaction will be worse than Stella? What if this time he stood against me? What if he made me choose between him and Chris?) All these questions rose up in my mind and suddenly I felt a sharp pain in my head. My head was throbbing hard. I massaged my temples to ease up the pain but it didn't work at all. My dad noticed that and he asked me in a worried tone.

David Wolf: Are you okay honey?

Cassie: Yeah, it's just a headache.

I replied. He quickly opened a drawer of his bedside table and gave me two tablets with a glass of water. I took them. He turned off the TV and laid beside me. I love to cuddle with my father. He held me close to him and kissed my forehead. A giggle escaped my lips when my dad sang a lullaby for me. My dad gave me a confused look and asked me.

David Wolf: What's so funny?

Cassie: Dad, I'm not a baby anymore.

My dad chuckled and spoke again.

David Wolf: You are my baby and you will be my baby. End of the story. Now close your eyes and go to sleep.

I closed my eyes and fell asleep in my father's arms.

I woke up early next morning, still in my dad's embrace. I looked at him and smiled. My dad actually sleeps like a baby. I would not have moved if I wouldn't have to pee. I tried hard not to wake him up but my dad was a light sleeper. I moved a bit and he opened his eyes and asked me.

David Wolf: What's wrong baby?

Cassie: Dad, please let me go. I have to pee.

David Wolf: Oh so sorry baby.

Cassie: It's okay Dad.

I quickly ran to the bathroom and did my morning business. I took a shower and changed into my dad's jeans and t-shirt. It was a perfect fit for him but for me it was baggy. I came out and my dad started laughing hard. I glared at him and spoke.

Cassie: That's not funny dad.

David Wolf: I can't help baby.

Cassie: Dad what do you think about Chris?

David Wolf: He's a gentleman. Whoever he'll get married with, sure will be a lucky young lady.

Cassie: What if that lucky lady is me?

David Wolf: What do you mean?

I sighed and sat beside him. I grabbed his hands and spoke.

Cassie: Dad! Chris and I, we like each other. I don't care for this so-called age difference between us. All I care about is that he loves me, he makes me smile, he makes me laugh and he is the only one who can make my pains go away. I want to spend my life with him. I want to see how far we can go with each other. Yes I can't live without him, but I can't lose you too. I love him but I can't live without you too.

David Wolf: Christopher is a really nice man. If that's what you want, then I'm with you. As long as you're happy, I don't care. I don't believe in these stupidities, like if they have age difference they won't work. That's all rubbish. A relationship works on three things, love, respect and trust. If you have all three then you are a perfect couple. Age difference really doesn't matter. If that's what makes you happy then I'm happy too.

He wiped my eyes and hugged me. Whenever I needed him, he was always there. He supported me in every single decision I took in my life and he trust me. He kissed the top of my head and spoke.

David Wolf: So, are you happy?

Cassie: Yes dad, I'm really happy.

He pecked my forehead and went to take shower. He had a flight in 3 hours and we woke up late. I packed his bags and my dad came out all ready to go. He picked up his bags and we exited the room. We went down and my dad checked out. We went to the nearest cafe for breakfast. After breakfast he drove me back to Hunt's Villa. On our way back, he asked me about our future plans and I told him the truth, we hadn't decided anything. We reached the Villa, I was about to get out of the car when my dad stopped me and said.

David Wolf: You are my daughter and I love you. Don't give up, Christopher is a really nice man. You'll be happy with him and as for me. I'm with you till the day I'll die.

Cassie: Dad please don't say that.

David Wolf: I love you, don't give up.

Cassie: I love you too and I won't, I promise.

He pecked my forehead and I got out of the car. I waved him and he drove off. I was happy that my dad was with me. I went inside the Villa only to be welcomed by another episode of yelling Stella.

Stella: What about her father? Do you have any idea what he will think of us when he'll know that...

I stepped in and didn't let her complete her sentence. I cut her in the middle and spoke.

Cassie: I told him everything and he is with us.

CHAPTER 18

Chris: What do you mean?

Cassie: I told him everything.

Chris: We were meant to do that together Cassie.

Cassie: I know and we are together.

Chris hugged me and I welcomed his warmth. Stella got up and left. I knew she was just being concerned about me and my happiness. Chris grabbed my hand and pulled me to his room.

As soon as he locked the door, I was pinned with the door. Chris caged me between the door and his huge figure. My heart was beating erratically in my chest. He leaned in and kissed me. I closed my eyes and kissed him back. I bit his lower lip, he smirked and parted his lips for me. Taking the full charge, my tongue slipped in his mouth. His mouth tasted mint chocolate ice cream. I licked every single corner of his mouth. I didn't want that kiss to end but we both were almost out of breath. I broke the kiss and Chris licked my lips. I looked at him through my lashes. He had a mischievous grin on his lips.

Chris: Someone missed me so much last night?

Cassie: I can't help okay.

Chris: Why are you so shy after such a kiss.

Cassie: Stop it.

He carried me in his arms bridal style and took me to the bed. He gently laid me down, with himself above me. I have never thought Chris could be so romantic. He laid upon me and buried his face in the crook of my neck. He took a deep breath and spoke again.

Chris: You are my drug. Your sweet vanilla scent is my favorite.

I blushed hard hearing him.

Cassie: Stop it.

Chris: Why?

Cassie: Because whenever you say these things, I feel something funny in my stomach.

Chris: Really, what kind of funny feeling? Tell me.

Cassie: Like butterflies tickling me in my stomach.

Chris: So you feel butterflies in your stomach while I'm around?

Cassie: Yes, that's what I just told you Chris.

He chuckled and kissed my neck. I gasped and he kissed that spot again. Then he bit my sweet spot lightly and I moaned softly.

Chris: Hmmm... Music to my ears.

His phone started ringing, he first ignored it. It stopped ringing. A few minutes later it started ringing again.

Cassie: It can be an important call Chris.

He groaned and picked up the call.

Chris: Hello ... Yes it's Christopher Hunt ... umm yes, ... I'll be there in 30 minutes. ... Okay. Thank you bye.

He cut the call and looked at me.

Chris: We will continue this at night. I won't do any mercy on you. I have to go now but I can't wait to see you at night.

He said it with a sexy smirk on his handsome face.

My heart skipped a beat. He pecked my lips and went out. It took me a while to get my breaths and my heartbeat to be back to normal. I didn't know why, but I was also excited to see him at night.

CHRIS' POV:-

I was enjoying my time with Cassie. I had missed her. My phone started ringing. I ignored it, the call ended then it started ringing again. I was in no mood to talk with anyone. I just wanted to stay with her. Then I heard Cassie.

Cassie: It can be an important call Chris.

She was right, I groaned in irritation, picked up my phone and looked at the caller ID. It was Detective Dean.

Chris: Hello

Detective Dean: Hello, is this Christopher Hunt?

Chris: Yes it's Christopher Hunt.

Detective Dean: Sir you gave me something. If you can remember?

Chris: Ummm... Yes.

Detective Dean: I have found everything. If you want you can come to my place. We can discuss everything about the case.

Chris: I'll be there in 30 minutes.

Detective Dean: Okay then, I'll send you the address.

Chris: Okay, Thank you bye.

Detective Dean: Okay bye.

Finally, the call I've been waiting for so long. I didn't want to leave her but this was important too. I wanted her to be free from all the nightmares she had been having since Hendrick kidnapped her. I looked at her, she was smiling cutely. I controlled myself or I would have jumped on her and kissed every inch of her delicious body. I took a deep breath to calm my nerves and spoke to her.

Chris: We will continue this at night. I won't do any mercy on you. I have to go now but I can't wait to see you at night.

Her face turned pink. She was blushing hard. I smirked and exited the room. I went to my car quickly, hopped in, started the engine and drove off. Detective Dean had sent me his address. I parked my car in front of a small yet beautiful house. I went to the door and knocked on it. Detective Dean opened it and invited me in. We walked into his living room. We both sat down and I asked.

Chris: what did you find out about Mr Peterson and Mr Black?

Detective Dean: You asked me about when Mr Peterson got married. He got married at the same month Miss Wolf was kidnapped.

Chris: I knew it. What else did you find out?

Detective Dean: They both were somehow connected. A few minutes before, Mr Peterson sent Miss Wolf a voicemail and right after that he called Mr Black. They talked for about 45 seconds then they didn't really contact each other.

Chris: Anything else?

Detective Dean: Oh Yes, Mr Peterson was engaged for years with this woman he married to. Her name is Nancy Peterson. They both studied together. She even shares businesses with Mr Peterson. Their families knew each other and also that Mr Peterson will be married with her in the future. That's what he did.

Chris: I think it's time for us to visit Mr Peterson, don't you think?

Detective Dean: I agree. This isn't even half of the story we are looking for.

Chris: I'll tell when we are going. I want to know everything. I hope Scott will be coming with us.

Detective Dean: That will be better if he will.

Chris: Yeah, I'll talk to him. Thank you Detective, for your help.

Detective Dean: It's okay Mr Hunt, it's my job. Let me know if you need anything else from me.

Chris: Okay have a great day.

Detective Dean: You too Sir.

I bid my goodbye and went back to my car. As I thought, Sam and Hendrick are involved in this together. I couldn't believe Sam fooled us all. But I promised myself that I would make him pay for everything Cassie had been through. Every pain she felt, every tear she shed.

I drove back to my place. It was dinner time by then. I quickly ran to my room, took a quick shower and changed into my casual jeans and t-shirt. I came back and sat beside Iris. My mother wasn't talking to me at all. I felt a bit hurt, for me it was like, she ain't trust me at all. I sighed and started eating. We finished dinner, my mother stood up and left. My father patted my shoulder and gave me a nod. I forced a smile and also left. I went back to my room, changed into my PJs and laid down on my bed. I closed my eyes but I couldn't sleep. After about an hour, I felt someone in my room. I opened my eyes and found Cassie, standing close to my bed and smiling cutely. She crawled into bed and asked me.

Cassie: I thought, you will finish what you started early.

I smiled, grabbed her hips and with an easy swing, I was on top of her.

Chris: I wasn't joking Candy.

I said and crashed my lips on hers.

CHAPTER 19 .

I pinned her on the bed, holding her hands above her head. I kissed her and she kissed me back. I licked her lips and she immediately parted her lips for me. I slipped my tongue in her mouth and she moaned loudly. I broke the kiss and looked at her. I didn't notice that she was wearing a huge size shirt. My breath hitched when I saw her creamy bare thighs. I pulled my shirt off and she blushed seeing my bare chest. I leaned in and started trailing wet kisses. My hands made their way in her shirt and she arched her back. I cupped her mounds and she moaned softly, I massaged them softly and took her lower lip between my teeth, nibbling lightly. She was trying so hard not to moan out loud but she couldn't control. I licked her neck and she whispered.

Cassie: Chris...

Chris: What is it, Cassie?

I asked and bit her sweet spot. She was fully turned on. Her heart was jumping wildly in her chest, her breaths were heavy and she was scratching my back with her nails.

Cassie: The butterflies are being wild in my stomach.

I smiled and kissed her back. I broke the kiss after a few minutes and spoke again.

Chris: I know Cassie, but you have to wait.

Cassie: Wait for what? I can't wait, please Chris.

Chris: I promise to make your all wishes come true but not now. You're not ready now. You need time.

She pouted cutely and I kissed her again. She smiled at me and I pecked her forehead. I laid back down and she quickly cuddled with me. Wrapping her arms around me she laid her head on my chest. I sneaked an arm around her waist, pulling her even closer.

Cassie: Good night Chris.

Chris: Good night darling.

We both closed our eyes and drifted off.

I was sitting on a couch, in Sam's apartment. Officer Dean was searching his bedroom to find more clues. The main door opened and I knew Sam was back. He walked into the living room and froze in his tracks.

Sam: What are you doing here?

Chris: Don't you know what I am doing here. You really thought after whatever you did to Cassie, I would let you run away that easily.

I threw the file on his table. He picked it up and started reading it. He read it and looked at me with a horror look on his face.

Detective Dean: We know everything about you and your game that you have played with Miss Wolf.

Detective Dean gave me a file. I read it. It was a deal he had signed with Hendrick Black. Cassie was right, he took money for keeping a relationship with Cassie and then break-up with her. I couldn't believe how anyone could think of hurting her like this. I went to him and grabbed his collar.

Chris: How could you do that to her? What she had done that made you do this?

Sam: I wanted money, I was going through my difficult time. Mr Black offered me something that solved all my problems.

Detective Dean: And you played with an innocent lady, who hasn't done anything wrong to you or anyone.

Sam: What can I say? It was her bad time. I didn't even touch her, she would have taken a hint, but she was stubborn.

Detective Dean: Did you know about Mr Black's plan?

Sam: Yes, I knew what he was planning. It was never about Hunts and their business. It was about Cassie only. He was obsessed with Cassie and I know he was planning to get her. He told me to keep a fake relationship with her and in return he gave me money that pulled me out of my problems. I came back here and got married.

Detective Dean: So you destroyed a woman's life for money. What if your wife comes to know your dark secret?

Sam: I don't think so. I hid it well from her.

Chris: Are you sure? We found these papers in your bedroom. You should shame yourself. He raped her many times. Destroyed her life. You were aware of his dark plans and all you did was take money from him and hide in your hole.

Sam: Sometimes, we have to be selfish. Yes I knew about his plan and I only cared about the money that solved all my problems.

We all heard a loud gasp and I smirked. That's all we needed. It was part of our plan.

Nancy: I can't believe it, Sam. How could you do this to a woman? You needed money, you should have asked me. But you destroyed someone's life and that too a woman.

Detective Dean had a plan as soon as we landed in London. He thought it would be better if we tell Nancy the reality of her husband. We met her and told her everything. And as I thought, she knew nothing about Sam's relationship with Cassie. So we created this scene to prove her that we weren't lying.

Chris: Now you are coming with us, so you can help Cassie.

Sam: You think I am a fool. I am going nowhere.

Nancy: I thought you would be better than other men Sam. How could you do this?

Saying that Nancy took her daughter and locked herself in her bedroom. Sam was knocking on the door crazily, but she didn't open. She was sobbing hard. I knew Sam must have told her lies as well. She never knew who Sam really is. The door unlocked and Nancy came out of the room. She had luggage in one hand and with the other, she was holding her daughter's hand. Sam followed her to the door. He was pleading with her to stop.

Nancy: I thought you would never do anything to hurt a woman like other men, but what you did is unforgivable, Sam. You also have a daughter. I can't imagine, they told me everything. I just didn't believe them. But I was a fool. Have you ever thought about your daughter before you did something this horrible to a lady. I don't want my daughter to go through all this. I'm leaving. And if you want us back in your life then go back with them. Beg her to forgive you. Do whatever you can to get justice for her. Till then, don't show me your face.

Nancy said it all and left. Sam knelt down on the ground, he was sobbing. I thought nothing could break him but maybe I was wrong. He stood up and lunged himself at me. He grabbed my collar and with gritted teeth he spoke.

Sam: You destroyed everything. Are you happy now? My wife left me with my daughter.

Chris: No Sam. She didn't leave you but the man who had destroyed Cassie. Think about it, just once place your daughter in Cassie's place and imagine whatever had happened to Cassie, happening with your daughter.

Sam: Shut up, why would it happen to my daughter? Don't you dare to think about my daughter. She is innocent.

Detective Dean: Miss Wolf is also someone's daughter Mr Peterson. She was innocent and you played her for money. Don't you think God will return it. You did something wrong with someone's daughter, that can happen to yours as well.

Sam stepped back. I finally saw guilt in his eyes. He sat on one of the couches.

Chris: Are you ready to talk? Or you want more drama in your life?

Sam: Five years ago, I borrowed some money from a person for my business. I had to give him his money back after a year. But after a year I lost everything. There was an accident in my factory, everything was destroyed. I needed money to repay that guy and also to get myself back into business. Three years ago I was invited into a business expo. I met Hendrick Black there for the very first time. He knew about my bank corrupcy. He offered me 5 millions with 5 shares of Black's Enterprises. It was a great chance for me to start up again and in return I was told to keep a fake relationship with Cassie. I didn't want to come back here to my family empty handed. So I accepted his proposal. He told me his plan but I only cared for my money.

Chris: You are an animal, even animals get attached with a person who takes care of them. But you, I have no words.

Sam: I am ready to confess my crimes.

I looked at detective Dean who nodded at me. Detective Dean didn't cuff him. We didn't want his daughter to see him like this. We stepped out of his apartment and went to the parking lot. We hopped into the car and drove back to the airport where my family plane was waiting for us. I only had to convince Cassie to stand for herself. It was difficult but I knew what I needed to do.

CHAPTER 20

CASSIE'S POV:-

It had been months since Chris and I started dating together. He went to London for a week. I missed him so much. I wanted to go with him. But he said it's better for me to stay in New York. And I was thankful that I didn't go with him. My father came the next day. He said he got a few days off and he wanted to spend his time with me. Being with my father or spending my time with him had always been a blessing for me. I always enjoyed his company. Stella was also getting better. Seeing me and Chris happy together, she started to understand that we both need each other. Mr Hunt had helped us to make her realize that we can have a future.

It was Iris' wedding day. Before Chris went to London, Scott and Iris told us that they are planning to get married. It was fun to attend your best friend's wedding. We went shopping almost every day. It took Iris 3 days to choose a perfect wedding gown for herself. When she told me she finally had chosen a gown for herself, I literally passed out in the boutique.

My dad asked me to go shopping with him for Iris' wedding. Just then I received Chris' text saying "he will take me shopping, then he has a surprise for me." I told my dad and he was more than happy to know I was going with Chris. Stella was getting better with us both. I woke up that day with the yummy aroma of freshly baked chocolate chip cookies. I quickly crawled out of my bed, got freshened up, brushed my teeth and went downstairs. As I stepped into the dining hall, I saw a bucket full of chocolate chip cookies was on the table. I licked my lips and went to the table. I picked a cookie and took a huge bite. I moaned when it's flavors burst inside my mouth.

Stella: Do you like it, Cassie?

She asked with an apologetic tone. I looked at her. She had a guilty smile on her face. I stood up and hugged her.

Cassie: Of course I love it, mom. I know you were just worried about me.

I whispered in her ear. We broke the hug and she pecked my forehead. It felt good to be part of their family.

Mr Hunt: Having a good time together, I see.

Mr Hunt said in a teasing tone. Stella slapped his arm playfully, then hugged him.

Mr Hunt: What you two are doing today?

He asked me as they both sat on their chairs.

Cassie: We are going shopping today. Then he said he has a surprise for me.

I replied with my mouth filled with cookies.

Stella: Slow down Cassie. They are all yours.

Stella said with a giggle. I grabbed another cookie and was about to take another bite when someone snatched it from my hand. I turned to look and found Chris standing. He sat beside me and ate the whole cookie.

Chris: Didn't she say slow down?

He said in a teasing tone and he stuck my tongue out.

After the breakfast, Chris took me shopping. But I could see we weren't going in the direction of the shopping mall.

Cassie: Chris, where are we going?

I asked suspiciously.

Chris: You'll see Candy. Enjoy the ride. Why do you care? Don't you trust me?

He asked me. I sighed in defeat.

Cassie: Of course I trust you. But you said we are going shopping.

I replied. He just flashed me his sexy smile and kept driving. I also didn't say anything else. After about an hour or so, he parked in front of a beautiful house. It wasn't big but it wasn't small either. With frowned brows, I was staring at the house. I didn't even notice, Chris was already out of the car and was standing beside me, holding the door open for me. I hopped out of the car and was looking at the house in awe. It was exactly like the house I had dreamt.

Chris: Do you like it?

He whispered in my ear and hugged me from behind.

Cassie: It's beautiful. I wish it would be my house. It's my dream house.

I replied in a dreamy tone.

Chris: It is your house, well our house.

He said and pecked my cheek. I was shocked. I turned to look at him and he was smiling.

Cassie: Is it a joke?

I asked and he shook his head.

Chris: This is your house Cassie.

He repeated himself with a huge grin. I squealed in happiness and jumped upon him. I wrapped my arms around his waist.

Cassie: How did you know?

I asked him.

Chris: I know everything about you.

He whispered in my ear. I blushed. He then grabbed my hand and led me into the house. I was shocked seeing the house from the inside. It was decorated exactly like I have always thought of decorating my own house. He pulled me towards the master bedroom. I gasped at the scene. A beautiful baby pink colored long dress was upon a dummy. It was a puffy dress. I looked at Chris who had a huge grin on his handsome face.

Cassie: So that's why we didn't go shopping.

I asked him and he shrugged his shoulders.

Chris: Maybe. Do you like it?

Cassie: Yes, it's beautiful.

I replied with shining eyes. He pushed me on the bed then he laid beside me. He pulled me closer and I laid my head on his chest.

Cassie: Sometimes, it feels like a dream.

I said in a dreamy tone.

Chris: What do you mean?

He asked me.

Cassie: This all, you and me together. It feels like a dream.

He smiled and pinched my chin lightly. He guided my lips to his and kissed me passionately. We broke the kiss after a minute and he smiled.

Chris: It is reality. And I promise you to be with you till my last breath.

He said and kissed me again.

Father: Now I announce you as husband and wife. You may now kiss the bride.

Father announced Iris and Scott husband and wife. We all cheered as they both kissed each other. It looked all dreamy. With teary eyes, I kept looking at the couple. I didn't notice the hand on my back was now gone. Iris pulled back and looked at us. She covered her mouth with her hand and gasped. I looked around in confusion and found Chris on one knee. He was holding a ring in his hand and was looking incredibly handsome. I clapped my hand over my mouth as tears started flowing freely from my eyes. I couldn't believe it was happening. And he said it. He had told me that he would propose to me in front of the world. He wasn't lying.

CHAPTER 21

CHRIS' POV:-

As I had planned, I proposed Cassie at Iris' wedding. Cassie was very happy. My father announced our wedding a month later. Cassie and I moved together in our house. I wanted her to feel happiness around her. She was still scared of everything she had faced, but she was getting better. She started to ignore people's eyes and questions. Mr Wolf was still trying hard to convince her to stand for herself, but she never liked to talk about Hendrick. She was still afraid of him. Knowing that Sam had already confessed his crimes, Scott was finally able to get a warrant for Hendrick Black. But he was nowhere to be found. Scott told us not to leave Cassie alone. He thought Hendrick could try something again.

Everyone was happy and were busy planning our wedding. Iris cancelled her honeymoon saying "she can't leave her best friend alone." I literally rolled my eyes over her statement. Cassie decided to stay at my parents Villa and I let her. She and Iris had plans for shopping. I didn't mind at all. But I did miss Cassie's warmth.

I opened my eyes in the morning and jumped off of my bed. I went into the bathroom and sat by the toilet. I threw up. I saw blood. There was blood on my vomit. It wasn't normal and I knew it. It had been happening for a few days. I decided to visit the doctor. I didn't eat anything. I felt like I would throw up again. I called one of my friends who was a doctor and fixed an appointment with him.

I was sitting in the waiting area, waiting for my turn. I was getting nervous. I didn't know but I was feeling something wrong. One of the nurses came and called my name. I stood up and stepped into the doctor's room. Jason Rick, he and I were together in our highschool. As I stepped into his room, he stood up and came to me. We shared a bro hug then I sat on one of the chairs and he sat on his chair.

Jason: So, how are you? What brought you to my office today?

He asked suspiciously. Jason and I were very good friends. We visited each other very often. But I never visited him in the hospital.

Chris: I wasn't feeling good. I thought it's better to see a doctor.

I replied casually.

Jason: What's wrong? Tell me everything.

He asked me.

Chris: I am suffering from food poisoning. It has been happening since last week. I can't digest anything. Everytime I eat, I end up throwing up. But today, it was different. I had blood in my vomit today.

I replied. He patiently listened to me then wrote something on the prescription paper.

Jason: I am writing a few tests. You better go to the laboratory and get these tests done soon. Come back to me when you have the results. And eat more vegetables.

He said and handed me the prescription paper. stood up, bid my goodbye and stepped out of his room. I went to the hospital's laboratory and showed them the paper. They took my blood samples and did some ultrasounds. They told me to come back after three days. I stepped out of the lab and went back home. On my way home, my mother called me to join the family dinner. I turned my car towards my parent's Villa. I parked my car and went into the villa. Cassie jumped on me and kissed me. I broke the kiss and pinched her cheek playfully.

Chris: Somebody missed me.

I said with a grin.

Cassie: Of course I have missed you.

She replied. I scooped her up in my arms and carried her bridal style. I took her to my room which was still empty for me. I laid her on the bed carefully then pinned her on the bed. I saw a frown on her face.

Chris: What's wrong Candy?

I asked suspiciously.

Cassie: Since when you have gotten these eye bags. You look tired Chris. Is everything okay?

She asked me in a worried tone. I pecked her lips and she smiled.

Chris: I am fine, don't worry too much about me. Tell me, how was your shopping?

I asked and changed the topic.

Cassie: Don't ask me. Your sister would kill me one day in a shopping mall. She took me to 3 shopping malls for just a pair of earrings. Can you imagine?

She replied in an annoyed tone and I chuckled.

Chris: Don't worry, I'll take you shopping from now on.

I said and pecked her cheek. She opened her arms for me and I laid upon her. She tightly wrapped her arms around me and I inhaled her sweet vanilla scent deeply. I had missed her too.

Cassie: You know, if there is anything you want to talk about, I am here to listen.

She whispered in my ear.

Chris: I know Cassie. Don't worry.

I replied and kissed her sweet spot. She moaned softly then giggled. We spent the rest of our day together in bed. Talking with each other. Cuddling, kissing each other. Soon Iris came to call us for dinner. We went downstairs and took our seats. My stomach growled as I smelled butter chicken. I hadn't had anything throughout the day. However, I wasn't able to eat much. My mother and Cassie got worried. I lied to them saying I had pizza for lunch. After the dinner, we bid our goodbyes and I took Cassie back to our house. As soon as we stepped into our house, I grabbed her hand and took her to our bedroom. We both did our night business, changed into our comfy PJs and cuddled together. I pulled Cassie on top of me and wrapped my arms around her waist. I kissed the top of her head and we both drifted off in each other's arms.

I was sitting in Jason's office. He was reading my test results. I was very nervous. In those three days, I hadn't thrown up a lot. But every time I threw up, I saw blood. I started to have stomach pains. I didn't know what was going on with me, but I was sure, it wasn't good.

Jason: I have texted you to come with your sister or your fiance.

He asked me and shut the file.

Chris: Yeah, but I am comfortable alone. I just want to know what's wrong with me.

I replied.

Jason: Christopher, everything you had told me about your health and all. And with these test results. You have stomach cancer.

He said and I stood up in shock.

Chris: What are you talking about?

I asked.

Jason: Sit down Chris. It's not that bad. You still have time to get it out of your system. You are very lucky because we caught it early.

He said.

Chris: But still it is cancer.

I asked.

Jason: Christopher, you need to trust me. I will get it out soon. I am giving you some more tests. As soon as I get the results, I will give you a date for your surgery. We will get rid of it soon.

He replied and gave me the prescription paper. I took it and went to the laboratory. Hearing Jason, that I had cancer. I felt like I would die soon. I didn't know why, but I was feeling that way. As I exited the hospital, I texted Cassie.

Chris: I think we should take a break. Or maybe we should separate our ways. Because I think Mom was right. We would never work together.

CHAPTER 22

CASSIE'S POV:-

I was sitting with Stella and Iris. It had been a long time since we had a tea party. We used to sit together and talk. And that day Stella decided to tell me things about Chris. How he used to behave like a child. I couldn't help but imagine little Chris being naughty. According to Stella, he was his dad's favorite. Whenever he did something that angered Stella, he always hid behind Mr Hunt.

She even showed me his childhood pictures. In a few, he was naked. My cheeks burned seeing his nudes. Iris couldn't stop teasing me after I saw those pictures. It was embarrassing but it was cute as well. I took a few pictures from Stella. My mind gave me a perfect plan to tease Chris. I smiled and hid his nudes in my bag.

As our morning tea party ended my dad came to pick me up. He and I had plans. I bid my goodbyes and stepped out of the mansion. My dad opened his arms like I was a little baby for him. I smiled and ran towards him. Wrapping my arms and legs around him like a little girl, I hugged him tightly. He pecked my cheek and held me tightly.

Cassie: I have missed you so much Dad.

I said with my face buried in the crock of his neck.

David Wolf: I have missed you too, sunshine. How are you?

He asked me and made me sit into his car.

Cassie: I am fine dad. How are you?

I asked as soon as he also hopped into the car.

David Wolf: I'm fine, sunshine.

He replied with a small smile. I hugged his strong arm and smiled, remembering the pet name he always had used for me. He pecked my forehead and drove off.

After an hour or so, he parked his car in front of the Mall and I raised my brow at him.

David Wolf: What? I have rights to give you whatever I want. After all, you'll soon be part of hunts and we won't get chances like this to spend time with each other.

By the time he ended his sentence, his eyes were filled with tears.

Cassie: Dad... I would never let anyone separate us. You and I will always have times like this.

I said and sat into his lap. He quickly wrapped his arms around me and we both cried. I remembered the time when I was moving to New York City. He was all teary eyes and emotional that time as well. I had to bribe him with a lot of my time to convince him to permit me to live in New York City. He broke the huge and wiped my tears.

David Wolf: How many times have I told you not to cry? I can't see tears in your eyes.

He said while tears kept falling from his eyes.

Cassie: You are the one who made me cry today.

I replied and hugged him again like a little girl who had missed her father. We both hopped out of the car and went into the mall. Dad bought me something from almost every shop. I rolled my eyes over his baby heart. I knew if I denied him for anything, he would start crying again. And I would cry as well, because I couldn't see him cry.

I was exhausted with all the shopping. Dad finally took me to the food court when my stomach growled loudly because of the hunger. I looked at dad who raised both of his hands in the air and bowed his head. We both were eating together. I told Dad about whatever Stella had told me about Chris. Dad just couldn't stop laughing at Chris' childhood memories.

After our lunch, dad took me back to the car. He would have dropped me at hunts when I gave him the address to my house. He gave me a confused look then just started driving. When he parked the car in the driveway and looked at the house, his eyes teared up again. He knew I always dreamt of buying a house like this in New York since childhood. I grabbed his hand and pulled him into my house. I showed him every corner of my house.

David Wolf: He is trying so hard to give you everything you had dreamt.

My father said and again he got teary.

David Wolf: Every father prays for his daughter to get a man who would love her more than her father. I guess God had heard my prayers and you got Christopher.

He said. I wiped his tears and hugged him tightly.

Cassie: I know Chris loves me more than he loves himself. But still he can't love me more than you do.

I whispered softly.

David Wolf: Keep one thing in your mind sunshine. happens, promise me you will always stand by his side. You will do everything to keep him happy. Because I know he would do the same with you.

He asked me softly.

Cassie: I promise you dad. I will.

I replied with a wide smile. He then gave me all the shopping bags. Then he bid his good bye and drove off. I took everything into my closet. But I didn't have any strength to open it up. I decided to take a shower. I went to the bathroom and peeled my clothes off. I hopped into the hot shower. I moaned as the hot water hit my body. I washed my body and stepped out of the shower. I wrapped a towel around my body and went into the closet. I changed into my comfy clothes. I picked a tank top with ripped jeans. I exited the closet and picked up my mobile. Just then I heard the door being unlocked. I smiled as I knew it would be Chris. I unlocked my mobile and read all unread messages. I froze when I read the last unread message in the list. It was Chris' text

"Chris: I think we should take a break. Or maybe we should separate our ways. I think Mom was right. We would never work together."

As soon as I read the text, Chris stepped into the room. He and I both were just staring at each other. My eyes welled up. I couldn't believe it. Everything was fine between us till morning. Then what had happened so bad that he told me to separate our ways. His eyes were puffy. "Was he crying? But why? I should be the one crying because he broke up with me." I thought as I walked closer to him. He raised a hand to stop me in the middle of the way.

Chris: Didn't you read my text? I told you that we can't be together.

He said but didn't look into my eyes.

Cassie: But why? Everything was fine in the morning then what happened now?

I asked in a pleading tone.

Chris: Nothing happened. I just don't feel the same for you.

He replied. He wasn't looking at me. I knew he was hiding something. I went to him, turned him to face me and grabbed his collar.

Cassie: What does that suppose to mean?

I asked angrily. He aggressively made me let go of his collar.

Chris: That means it's over. Pack your stuff and leave. I don't want to see your face again in my life.

He said and went to the bathroom. He shut the door with a loud thud. Tears blurred my vision as those words played again and again in my mind. Sobbing hard, I stepped out of the room and ran towards the main door. Just as I was crossing the living room, I saw an envelope on the table. I went to it and opened it. My heart sank into the pit of my stomach as I read the papers into the

envelope. It was Chris' test results. And in the end I read the name of the disease "CANCER." I quickly pulled my mobile out of my pocket and took pictures of the results. Then I put them all back into the envelope and exited the house. I knew the doctor who was treating him. I saw his signed proscription papers. And I knew where to find him.

CHAPTER 23

CASSIE'S POV:-

I parked my car in front of the hospital where Chris' friend doctor Jason worked. To my luck, he was just stepping out of the hospital. I stopped him and showed him all the pictures I had taken. He looked at the screen then at me with a shock visible on his face. I gritted my teeth at him.

Cassie: Is it true?

I asked angrily. He sighed in defeat and signalled me to follow him. He took me towards the cafeteria of the hospital. We sat on one of the tables.

Jason: It is true. He came to me three days ago. I gave him some tests. After the results he was diagnosed with stomach cancer. But Miss Wolf, it's just a start. We can operate it out without any kind of risks. He just didn't listen to me.

He explained everything to me. I patiently listened to him. I nodded my head when he was done.

Cassie: Then what did he have to do all this drama? If it's nothing.

I asked.

Jason: Because he thinks that he won't survive. I assure you Miss Wolf, he is perfectly fine. It's just a start. It can be treated.

He replied. An idea popped up in my mind and I smiled mischievously.

Cassie: Can you do me a favor, doctor?

I asked and crossed my fingers.

Jason: Of course, just say it.

Cassie: I want you to call him an hour later. Tell him that I came to you, I know everything and I have proofs. Tell him that I left crying and you are worried if I would do something Stupid.

I replied with a smirk.

Jason: Are you sure Cassie? I mean he would panic.

He asked worriedly.

Cassie: Don't worry, he will be fine. He will be where I want him exactly.

I said. He nodded his head. I bid him goodbye and went to do all the arrangements. I wanted everything ready. He didn't know how stubborn I could be when it comes to the people I love. And Chris, he is my life.

CHRIS' POV:-

I was still sitting on the bathroom floor. I was still crying. I couldn't help but think how hurt she would be with my harsh words. But I just didn't want her to waste her life for me. She deserved every happiness I couldn't give her. The tears in her eyes were still killing me. I was feeling an ache inside my chest. The ache I only felt whenever I saw her teary eyes. It was the very first time when I became the reason behind her tears.

I stood up and exited the bathroom when I heard my mobile phone ringing. I looked at the caller ID. It was Jason.

Chris: Hi man, is everything okay?

I tried my best to sound normal.

Jason: Cassie was here. She knows everything. She just left crying. I'm afraid if she would do anything stupid.

He replied in a panicked tone.

Chris: What? Why did you tell her?

I asked angrily.

Jason: I didn't. She had pictures of your test results. Do something Chris.

He replied.

Chris: Don't worry. I know where she would be. I will call you as soon as I will find her.

I replied and hung up. I splashed cold water on my face and changed my clothes. I grabbed my keys, my mobile and my wallet. Then I ran out of the house. I quickly hopped into my car and drove off. I knew she would have gone to her apartment. So without wasting any time, I drove to her apartment.

Fifty minutes later, I parked my car and ran towards her apartment. I reached her apartment and found the door was still open. My heart started drumming inside my rib cage as I stepped into her apartment. I called her many times but she didn't answer. I went to her bedroom and sighed in relief. There she was. She was wearing a bridal gown and was sitting on the edge of her bed. I went to her and knelt down in front of her.

Cassie: How could you do this to me? How could you hide this from me? I thought we shared everything.

She complained with tears in her eyes.

Chris: I just did what I had to. I can't see tears in your eyes.

I replied and she slapped me.

Cassie: Don't you dare lie to me. You are the one who made me cry today. You broke my heart. You told me to leave. How could you do that to me?

She hissed and started slapping my chest.

Chris: I am so sorry Cassie.

I replied and wrapped my arms around her. I stood up then sat on the bed with her on my lap. She buried her face in the crock of my neck and I rocked her back and forth like a child.

Chris: I just want to see you happy Cassie. I can't destroy your life.

I reasoned and she tightened her hold around my neck.

Cassie: How could you say that? When I was facing the darkest time of my life you were the one who helped me. You stood by me, you pulled me back into the lights, you helped me stand up again. Whatever I am today is just because of you. How could you think that I will leave you alone in your hard times. What were you thinking? Did you think I don't love you?

She complained again.

Chris: I have broken your heart. Punish me but please Cassie, stop crying. I can't see you cry.

I whispered in her ear.

Cassie: Your punishment is that you have to marry me here and now.

She replied and my mouth hung open.

Chris: What? I can't do that Cassie. Are you out of your mind?

I replied and regretted my words. Because she started sobbing hard. In the end, I had to give up.

Chris: Okay, I'll do whatever you want. Please don't cry. I can't stand that.

I replied. She looked at me then smiled. She jumped off of my lap and pulled me up as well. I stood up. She grabbed my hand and pulled me out of her bedroom. She took me to the spare room. It was decorated with flowers and ribbons and lights. The priest was standing in the middle of the room. I couldn't believe it. She had planned all this.

Cassie: We are ready father.

She said and looked at me. I shook my head and smiled over her stubbornness.

Chris: Yes we are.

I replied and the priest smiled.

Priest: Exchange your vows.

He said and we both looked into each other's eyes. We both smiled and said in union.

Chris and Cassie in union: I LOVE YOU.

We both got lost into each other's eyes. We didn't care for anyone. In that moment she was with me and that all mattered to me. Soon the priest announced us husband and wife. I grabbed her by her waist and pulled her close. I cupped the back of her head and crashed my lips over hers. I kissed her like she was the river and I was thirsty for decades. I let go of her because I wanted to save the best for later.

CHAPTER 24

CASSIE'S POV:-

After our emergency wedding, Chris grabbed my hand and locked my apartment. He took me to the parking lot, we both hopped into his car and he drove off. We didn't talk at all. We were just stealing glances over each other. I couldn't wait to go back to my home. I was both nervous and excited at the same time. I was glad though, I took that decision immediately as I learned about his disease. I knew I could be the only person who could convince him to get it operated soon.

He parked the car into the garage and hopped out of the car. He came to my side and scooped me up in his arms. He carried me bridal style to our bedroom. He gently laid me down on the bed then locked the bedroom door. He stripped off his shirt and my heart started drumming erratically inside my rib cage. He kicked his shoes off then came to me.

He sat behind me and undid the zipper of my dress. He brushed his knuckles over my bare back and I gasped. He pulled the dress off of me. He undid my hair then he leaned in and pecked my bare shoulder. He was teasing me. I leaned back. My back hit his hard chest. He then stood up and undid his jeans. My cheeks burned as he peeled his jeans off. He scooped me up again and took me to the bathroom.

He sat me down on the ground and went to the bathtub. He filled it with warm water then added my favorite lavender fragrance into the water. He then came to me and grabbed my hand. He cupped my face and leaned in. He captured my lips into a passionate kiss. He opened my bra with one hand. It dropped on the floor. He released my lips and grabbed my hand. He took me to the bathtub and made me sit. I got rid of my panties and he also stripped off his boxers. He also stepped into the bathtub and laid down beside me. I rested my head on his chest and wrapped my arms around his waist.

Chris: You are crazy. I wanted to push you away and you blackmailed me to marry you immediately.

He said with a chuckle.

Cassie: It's not my fault that you have a baby heart.

I replied in an annoyed tone.

Chris: I love you Cassie. I just don't want to see tears in your eyes.

He said after a few moments.

Cassie: I know Chris. I love you too. If you didn't leave me when I needed you, how could I do that. I am back on my feet because of you. I'm not saying it was just you. The others helped me as well but your support was stronger than all.

I replied honestly. He also wrapped his arms around me tightly and kissed the top of my head.

Chris: As soon as the surgery would be done, I will give you what you need from me. Right now, we have to wait. I don't want you to get infected as well.

He said and I nodded my head. I knew he was right. I was happy that finally we were one. I didn't want to jump on him. Not until he would be perfectly fine. He pinched my chin lightly and guided my lips towards his. He captured my lips again. I couldn't help but kiss him back with the equal passion. His shaft poked on my stomach and I pulled away immediately. He gave me a confused look and my cheeks burned.

Cassie: Your little friend down there is getting excited for me.

I said and he started laughing hysterically. An idea popped up into my mind and I smirked mischievously. His laughter died as I grabbed his shaft.

Chris: What are you doing Cassie?

He asked me and I rolled my eyes.

Cassie: I was getting bored so I decided to play with your little friend.

I replied in an annoyed tone. I started pumping his shaft and he threw his head back in pleasure. I sat on his thighs and kept pumping his shaft. It was hard as iron. I couldn't help but think about his shaft buried deep inside me. My cheeks burned as my brain showed me an image of Chris pumping himself inside me, hard and fast.

Chris: What are you thinking about Cassie?

His husky voice snapped me back to reality. I looked at him then shook my head.

Chris: Are you thinking about us making love into our bedroom?

He asked me. I smiled shyly and nodded my head. He pushed a wet hair strand behind my ear. I kept doing my work on his shaft. He started growling inside his chest. His shaft had grown bigger and harder.

Chris: That's it Cassie, don't stop please. I'm so close.

He said in a husky voice. I did as he had told me. In a few minutes he growled loudly and released himself into the water. Breathing heavily, he grabbed my hand and pulled me on his stomach.

Chris: Time to return you the favor.

He said. Before I could say anything, he captured my lips in a hungry kiss. He was sucking and grazing my lower lip like he was hungry for days. I gasped as his thumb touched my clitoris. He let go of my lips and hugged me tightly. I also wrapped my arms around his neck and buried my face in the crook of his neck.

His thumb kept teasing my quivering bud. I moaned loudly as he pushed a finger inside my wet cure. I tugged his hair lightly as his finger hit the right spot. He started pumping his finger inside me. It felt so good. I felt like I was flying into the sky. He added another finger and I moaned. He kept doing his work until I felt a knot in the pit of my stomach. My walls tightened around his fingers.

Chris: That's it Cassie. You're so close. Let it go. Cum for your hubby.

He whispered into my ear huskily.

Cassie: CHRIS...

I cried in pleasure and experienced the earth shattering orgasm of my life. I was shaking because of the hard orgasm. He chuckled and wrapped his arms around me. He washed both of our bodies. He was gentle as always. Once done, he drained the water of the tub. He first dried my body and wrapped a towel around my body. Then he dried himself. He also wrapped a towel around his waist. He scooped me up again and stepped out of the bathroom.

He took me to the closet. He made me wear my lacy nighty. Then he wore his comfy PJs. He then grabbed my hand and pulled me out of the closet. He took me to our bed. He laid down first, then made me lay on top of him. I inhaled his masculine scent deeply. I couldn't believe I was finally Mrs Cassandra Hunt. I was finally part of their family. I was finally his partner. I was finally his.

Cassie: We are going to the hospital tomorrow. I want this surgery to be over soon so we can start our life together.

I said and he smiled widely.

Chris: Yes ma'am. As you wish my dear wife. Mr Hunt would only obey Mrs Hunt.

He replied and I giggled again. He leaned in and captured my lips again. He sucked my tongue and I felt myself melting into his arms. He let me go and I rested my head into his chest. His calmed heartbeat became my lullaby. It wasn't long when I slipped into my dream land.

CHAPTER 25

CASSIE'S POV:-

It was finally the day for his surgery. The doctors were very hopeful. Because his case got caught at the very beginning. I was getting nervous. My palms were getting sweaty. To cheer me up, he started discussing our honeymoon plans.

Chris: I am telling you I will not take you where Iris and Scott are going. They won't let us have our fun.

He said and I giggled at the hint of irritation in his voice.

Cassie: Okay fine. But I want to see Paris as well.

I said with a pout.

Chris: I will take you wherever you want to go. Don't worry, I just don't want our honeymoon with Iris. She will snatch you away from me and I don't want that. Especially on my honeymoon tour.

He warned me again and I couldn't help but laugh. Stella stepped into the room and hugged me. She pecked Chris' forehead.

Stella: Stay strong son. She will be waiting for you.

She said and my eyes watered up again.

Chris: Cassie, didn't we talk about it. No more crying.

He said softly. Before I could wipe my tears, somebody wiped them off of my cheeks. I looked up and found my father standing. I quickly stood up and wrapped my arms and legs around him.

David Wolf: Don't worry, I won't let her cry.

My dad said to Chris who nodded his head. Soon Jason came into the room, Mr Hunt was with him.

Jason: Are you all ready?

He asked and everyone looked at me. I nodded my head and went to Chris. I bent over and captured his lips in a passionate kiss. I pulled back and looked into his eyes.

Cassie: See you soon Mr Hunt.

I said and he nodded his head with a smile. Jason signalled the nurses and they took him towards the operation theater. We all sat into the waiting area. My dad sat beside me. Iris and Scott came as well. We all sat together and started praying. Stella was getting very emotional. I went to her and hugged her.

Stella: Thank you Cassie. I needed that.

She said and smiled. Mr Hunt sat beside Stella and I went back to my dad. He was my strength. I hugged his arm tightly and laid my head on his shoulder. He circled his arm around my waist. Doctor Jason had already told us. The surgery would take almost an hour. But still we had to wait 60 minutes.

The operation got started and we all started counting every single second. I was thankful that my dad was by my side. I didn't know how I would be able to cross that bridge without him. My father went to the cafeteria and brought something to eat for all of us. I wasn't in the mood to eat anything but my dad fed me by his hand. I couldn't say no to him. So I shut my mouth and ate.

Finally, the longest one hour of our lives was over. Doctor Jason stepped out of the operation theater along with the other doctors with a smile on their faces.

Doctor Jason: Congratulations to you all. The surgery went fine.

He said and we all sighed in relief.

Cassie: How is he? When can we see him?

I asked doctor Jason.

Doctor Jason: It can take some time for him to wake up again. He will wake up probably in the morning. We are shifting him into the private room. You all can see him. Just make sure not to speak around him. It's good for him to rest. It would be better if only two people would stay with him at night.

David Wolf: Thank you so much doctor.

My father thanked him.

Doctor Jason: It's alright Mr Wolf.

He said and left. We all hugged each other happily. My father held me closer to his chest for a bit longer. He knew I needed him with me. Soon they shifted him into the private room. We all went there. He was sleeping peacefully. I pecked his forehead lovingly and sat beside the bed.

Stella: I will stay with him here. Scott can stay with me. We both will take care of him

Stella said. I just didn't want to leave him.

Mr Hunt: No, I and Mr Wolf have agreed on something better than that. Cassie will stay with him and Mr Wolf will stay with her. Cassie is his wife, in case he would wake up at night and would want anything, at least Cassie would be here to help him. Plus, he would easily tell her anything. He wouldn't be comfortable with any of us except for Cassie.

Mr Hunt said and I looked up at my dad who nodded his head. I smiled at him and he pecked my forehead.

Iris: Dad is right mom. He needs her here with him. We will come back in the morning.

Iris added.

Stella: I know, I just don't want to leave him alone.

Stella said.

Mr Hunt: He won't be alone. You know you can trust Cassie.

Mr Hunt said and pecked Stella's forehead.

Stella: Yes, I can't trust anyone but Cassie with my son. I'll call in the morning and bring you breakfast. Don't eat anything stupid here, okay?

She said in a motherly tone and I nodded my head with a smile. Everyone exited the room. They all went home and I stayed with Chris along with my father. My father laid down on the spare bed. He looked tired.

David Wolf: Cassie, wake me up if anything happens or you need anything. Don't go out by yourself, okay sunshine?

My dad asked me.

Cassie: Okay dad. Good night.

David Wolf: Good night sunshine.

Dad greeted me as well and drifted off. I was sitting on the couch beside the bed. I was holding his hand. I just didn't want to leave him. Like he didn't leave me alone.

A few hours passed. I was still awake. I knew I couldn't sleep until I would hear his voice. I yawned and stretched my arms above my head.

Chris: You should sleep as well Candy. Or you will get sick.

I heard his voice and snapped my head into his direction. He was looking at me with a smile on his face. He opened his arm for me to lay down beside him on the bed. I quickly stood up, kicked my shoes off and got rid of my jacket. I laid beside him and he wrapped his arm around my waist.

Cassie: Does it hurt?

I asked, seeing a frown on his face.

Chris: It hurts that's why I asked you to be closer to me.

He replied with a small smile. I smiled and rested my head on his chest. I also wrapped my arms around him. I pecked his forehead lovingly and he closed his eyes. Soon, his breath became even. Hinting me that he was already asleep. I inhaled his masculine scent deeply, filling my lungs with it as deeply as I could. His scent calmed my nerves. I thanked God for everything I had gotten and closed my eyes. It didn't take me long to slip into my dream land.

CHAPTER 26

CHRIS' POV:-

As I woke up again, I looked around and found her sitting on the couch. I knew she was only waiting for me to wake up. She was very worried about me. Her father was sleeping on the spare bed. I felt bad for troubling them like that. But I could not help with my situation. She yawned and stretched her arms above her head.

Chris: You should sleep as well Candy. Or you will get sick.

I said in a low gruffy voice and she snapped her head into my direction. She smiled as she looked at my face. I was smiling to make her feel better. I opened my arm for her. I wanted her to lay down with me on the bed. She quickly stood up and kicked her shoes off. She stripped her jacket off. She hopped on the bed and laid beside me. I wrapped my arm around her waist.

Cassie: Does it hurt?

She asked me with a worried tone. As if she could feel my pain.

Chris: It hurts that's why I asked you to be closer to me.

I replied with a small smile. She smiled and rested her head on my chest. Then she wrapped her arms around me as well. She pecked my forehead lovingly and I closed my eyes. I inhaled her sweet lavender scent deeply. Soon, I was in my dream land.

I opened my eyes again when I felt like someone was moving. I looked at Cassie, she was trying to get herself free from my hold.

Chris: What is it, Cassie?

I asked as I saw tears in her eyes. She wiped her tears and wrapped her arms around me again. I understood, she might have had a nightmare. I rubbed her back soothingly.

Chris: That's okay Cassie. It was just a nightmare. I am with you. No one will ever hurt you. I promise, Candy.

I cooed her lovingly. She sniffed a few times then calmed down. She looked at me and I pecked her forehead.

Chris: Close your eyes. Go back to sleep.

I said and she nodded her head. She snuggled even closer to me then closed her eyes again. I smiled and tightened my hold around her. I kept rubbing my hand on her back until I felt she was finally asleep. I sighed and closed my eyes again. I drifted off again, dreaming of my future with her.

I opened my eyes when I heard the birds chirping around. I looked at my sweet wife. She was still asleep with her arms and legs around me. It felt good to have her around me. It felt good to even think that she was my wife. That she was mine and she belonged to no one.

I brushed my knuckles across her cheek and she smiled. I chuckled and pecked her lips. She slowly opened her eyes and gave me a worried look.

Cassie: Are you okay, Chris?

She asked me worriedly. I smiled and nodded my head.

Chris: I am fine Candy. Now tell me, did you sleep well last night?

I asked and she nodded her head with a cute smile on her face that melted my heart.

Cassie: Yes, I slept fine.

She replied and I smiled. She intertwined her fingers with mine and I pecked the back of her head.

Chris: You are my life.

I said and she hid her face in my chest.

It had been a week since my surgery. I was at my parent's Villa. They did not let us leave. My mother thought it would be too much for Cassie to handle all alone. To be honest, I thought the same. I did not want to burden her with anything. She was my wife, not my maid or something.

I was sitting in the garden, on one of the benches. Cassie came from behind and wrapped her arms around me. I liked every time she did that. It made me feel alive. Her presence, her smiling face and her hugs made me feel so alive. I really never knew how much I loved her. I did not just love her, she was my life.

Cassie: What are you thinking, Chris?

She asked me with a frown on her beautiful face.

Chris: Nothing my dear wife. I was just thinking when will I get my clean chit and I will have you whole.

I replied in a teasing tone. At first, she frowned because she did not understand. In a minute her eyes widened and her cheeks turned pink. She slapped my arm playfully and sat on my lap. She

cupped my face with her fragile hands and leaned in. I smirked seeing her boldness. She was the same Cassie who used to push me away when I pecked her cheek publicly.

She captured my lips and I cupped the back of her head. She was intoxicating as always. Her mouth tasted like chocolates. She pulled away and pecked my forehead. I smiled because I knew she was just trying to make me feel better. And she knew how much I loved her. She knew I needed her around me. Wrapping her arms around my neck, she pulled me into a long, loving hug. Her sweet lavender scent made me feel better.

Iris: You guys can't even wait for a few days. Sometimes I think, you both will fuck each other publicly the day doctor Jason will give you clean chit.

I growled as I heard my sister. Cassie did not break the hug. I was thankful. I glared at Iris' who zipped her mouth shut.

Chris: Just that's the reason I am not taking her to the same country as you are going for your honeymoon. I want my wife with me, all my honeymoon. I don't want her to be snatched away from me.

I replied and she looked at both of us with wide eyes.

Iris: What? Where are you both going?

She asked with shock visible on her face.

Chris: Wherever we are going, it is none of your concern. It's my life and it's my wife. Go and find yourself another country.

I replied and she stuck her tongue out at me. I chuckled and Cassie giggled seeing her annoyed face.

CHAPTER 27

CASSIE'S POV:-

We all were at our home. Mr Hunt and Stella decided to get our wedding done properly. She said it's her only son and she had so many wishes. I could only adore the moment. I knew how much Mr Hunt and Stella loved both of their children. Chris tried to decline the idea as he was told to stay away from me until the wedding would be done. But he bit his tongue as he earned a sharp glare from her mother. Iris and I giggled seeing him nervously rubbing the back of his neck when Stella glared at him.

Our honeymoon flights were fixed. Scott and Iris were going to Paris while I was still unaware of the destination Chris had decided. He was not telling me anything because he knew I would tell Iris. That was why I was also in the dark.

My dad took a few days off from his work and came to live with me until I would get married with Chris again. He was very happy when I told him the reason behind our emergency wedding. He was more than happy to hear that I kept my promise and did not leave Chris alone when he needed me most. Chris was getting better, in fact, he was perfectly fine.

I asked about my mom and Katy who had not come along with my father. He did not give me any reason. I asked him again and again and at last he declined the question. He said he was enough for me to get married. Of course, he was everything to me. But I wanted my mom and my sister by my side as well. So I decided to call my mom. But only to regret my decision later.

I called my mom and asked her why she did not come. And she told me that I had already gotten married with Chris then why should she come to see the show only. I tried to reason her but instead of hearing me out, she hung up and actually blocked my number. That angered me and I went out.

But as always, Chris came from behind and took me to a place where we talked to each other. I told him everything while sobbing. As usual, he cooed me like a baby and said something that made me forget everything. He said that if my mom was not by my side the time when I needed her most, why am I expecting her to be by my side on my wedding day. He was right. I had not seen my own mother by my side during my dark period but Stella. She was always there to make me feel better. To make me feel safe. To be honest, Stella was more mother to me ever since I had met her. And when she accepted me as Chris' soulmate, she was even more caring and loving. Stella was the mother figure for me for almost nine years.

To make me feel even better, Chris took me to his parent's mansion. Seeing everyone around me, made me feel better. And I forgot everything that my mom had said to me. I decided to leave her to be. I did not want to beg her to be with me at my wedding. I have people who cared for me without asking.

I stayed at Hunt's Villa. They did not leave me alone. Next day in the morning, Chris took me back to my house. I had already sold my apartment as I did not need that anymore. I knew Chris and I would be together forever. And I did not need anything else in my life except for Chris by my side.

I unlocked the door as my father was sleeping peacefully in his room. Taking advantage of being alone in the house, Chris locked the door and scooped me up from the ground. I wrapped my legs around his waist and held his shoulders to balance myself. He took me to the kitchen and made me sit on the kitchen counter. We both kissed each other sensually. Forgetting all the boundaries. I had missed him so much. I had missed his warmth and his kisses. I wanted to taste his mouth again. So taking the charge, I slipped my tongue into his mouth and explored his mouth. I moaned inside his mouth as his tongue caressed my tongue in a sensual way.

We came back to earth when he heard the doorbell. We pulled away immediately and Chris groaned lowly in frustration. I giggled and got myself together. I knew I needed to open the door. I straightened my clothes and my hair with my hands and hopped off of the kitchen counter. I went to the door and opened it. I saw a woman standing in front of me. She looked tired and very worried about something. Seeing my face, she smiled and I smiled back at her. She looked almost the same age as mine, I gave her a confused look.

Cassie: Can I help you?

I asked her with a smile.

Strange woman: Yes, agent Wolf. I would like to meet agent Wolf.

She replied and I frowned my brows in confusion. I was sure my father said he took a few days off for my wedding.

Cassie: I am sorry but he is here to attend my wedding. He did not tell me he was expecting someone.

I replied and she shook her head.

Strange woman: I am sorry for being here at this time. But I just can't wait. I need to meet him. It's an emergency and I need his help.

She replied to which I smiled and invited her in. I took her to the drawing room.

Cassie: Please sit down. I will send dad in a minute.

I said and she nodded her head with a smile on her tired face.

Strange woman: Thank you.

She thanked me and I just smiled. I went to the kitchen and pulled out a bottle of water from the fridge. I filled a glass then took it to the drawing room. I offered her water. She downed it's content in one go. I took the glass and stepped out of the drawing room. I went to my father's room and sat on the edge of the bed. I rubbed his shoulder with my hands and he slowly opened his eyes. He smiled seeing my face and pulled me close to him. I giggled and hugged him.

Cassie: Dad, there is a woman waiting for you in the drawing room. She said it's an emergency. That's why I had to come and ask you.

I whispered in his ear and he broke the hug. He looked at me with a frown. Then he nodded his head and sat up on the bed.

David Wolf: She must be the one Alaiza has sent here, Mrs Rutherford. She is looking for her husband. The case is complicated. Nobody knows what had happened to her husband.

He said and I nodded my head.

Cassie: So, are you planning to help her?

I asked.

David Wolf: I don't know anything right now, sunshine. I first need to look into this. Only then I will decide if I can help her or not.

He replied and stood up. He went to the bathroom and I went back to the kitchen where Chris was waiting for me.

Chris: Who has guts to disturb us in our alone time?

He asked in an annoyed tone and I giggled. I went to him and wrapped my arms around his waist. He also wrapped his arms around me and held me tightly to his chest.

Cassie: A woman came looking for my father. Dad said she is looking for her missing husband. I hope she will find him soon.

I replied as I felt the exact same sadness I had seen in her eyes.

Chris: I know your father will help her find her husband very soon.

He replied and rubbed my back to make me feel better. I felt myself getting calmed between his arms. Hearing his calmly beating heart, I finally felt better. He kissed the top of my head but did not break the hug. He knew what I wanted.

CHAPTER 28

CHRIS' POV:-

Finally the day was here. I had waited so much for that day. I was not allowed to talk to Cassie. My sister was my greatest enemy in that time period. She did not even let me take her for dates or shopping. I just wanted my time with my wife. Of course, she was my wife. But according to my mother, I could not see her until the wedding would be done properly. I really wanted to protest but my mother shushed me with a glare. I could not do anything but to bite my tongue. But of course, no one could ever keep her away from me. It was near to impossible.

A day before our wedding, I called Mr Wolf. After almost begging him, he finally agreed to help us meet each other. The day was perfect as I knew Iris could not interrupt us. Scott's grandparents visited their parents to meet the new bride. They could not attend the wedding as Mr Lu could not travel at that time. So it was perfect timing for us to meet each other. As I knew Iris would not be around to catch us or inform my mother that Cassie and I were on date.

I asked Mr Wolf not to tell her about our secret plan. I wanted to make her happy. I wanted to surprise her. As promised, he did not tell her anything. I told Mr Wolf to bring her to a mall for shopping. He did as I asked him. He brought her into the mall. When she saw me in front of her, her eyes sparkled with happiness. She ran towards me and jumped on me. Wrapping her arms around my neck and her legs around my waist, she hugged me tightly. She buried her face in the crook of my neck.

Cassie: I have missed you so much. I can not tell you how lonely I started to feel without you by my side.

She whispered in my ear. I tightened my hold around her waist as well. I inhaled her sweet vanilla scent deeply. I had missed her as well.

Chris: You are not alone. I had missed you too, Candy.

She giggled hearing my confession. I set her down on the ground and we both looked at Mr Wolf.

Mr Wolf: You both have only one hour. Go and enjoy kids.

Mr Wolf said and I nodded my head. Cassie pecked his cheek and I led her out of the mall. We hopped into the car. I started the engine and drove off. I took her to a lake. I unbuckled my seatbelt and hovered over her. She gasped loudly and her cheeks turned pink.

Chris: Are you blushing, Mrs Hunt?

I asked her and she whimpered. I leaned in and kissed her neck.

Cassie: Please do not leave any love bite. Or your mother will see it tomorrow.

She whispered softly. I chuckled and nodded my head. I avoided nibbling her neck. But I kept kissing and licking her neck. She was breathing heavily. My heart was also very wild inside my rib cage.

Chris: I can not wait to make you mine. I can not wait to pleasure you.

I said and she blushed even more.

Cassie: I also can not wait to make you mine. I can not wait to fall asleep in your arms every night and wake up in your arms again in the morning.

She confessed and I smiled. I cupped her face and caressed both of her cheeks with the pad of my thumbs. I then pecked her forehead lovingly. I did not know how to thank God for such a bundle of happiness I have gotten. After an hour with each other, I took her back to her house where her father was waiting for her. She did not have dinner with me. She said her father would be having dinner with her and she promised him. I smiled and nodded my head. She pecked my cheek and left.

I was standing on the stage with my heart wildly beating inside my rib cage. I was taking deep breaths to calm my nerves. Everyone was waiting for her to come out. Her father went into the bride's room and after a few minutes, he walked out of the room with Cassie by his side.

My mouth dropped on the floor when I looked at her. She was wearing a different wedding dress. My mother had chosen that dress for Cassie. It was a long, lacy princess dress. She curled her long hair. It suited her more. I was drooling over my wife shamelessly. Her cheeks were pink as she noticed me drooling over her. I could not help it. She was looking very beautiful. I could not peel my eyes off of her.

She walked towards me. I gave her my hand. She accepted my hand and stood in front of me. She had a bright smile on her beautiful face. It was as bright as the sun.

Mr Hunt: As we all know, these two love birds have already gotten married without us. They did not even wait for anything. They did not even ask us. They called a priest and got married. And because of that, we decided to punish them. We kept them apart for a while. But I can bet they had been meeting each other. Now we think it is too much punishment for them. So now, they are allowed to kiss each other openly and they can start their married life as well.

My father said. Everyone started laughing and I rubbed the back of my neck nervously.

Stella: I wish you both a happy married life with lots of kids and happinesses and joys. I wish you both a long happy life together. A life filled with love and happinesses.

My mother gave her blessings to us. Then the microphone was handed to Mr Wolf.

Mr Wolf: I have nothing else to say. Just be happy you both. My blessings are with you. And Christopher, she is the sunshine of my life, do not think I will stop visiting her. She is a stubborn young lady, don't be angry at her if she would do something wrong.

Mr Wolf said as tears were flowing freely from his eyes. My father patted his shoulder then they both hugged each other.

Stella: I want to thank you Mr Wolf for allowing her to be part of our family. Cassie is just like Iris for me. And I promise to take care of her all her life.

My mother thanked Mr Wolf. He nodded his head and wiped his tears.

Iris: What are you both waiting for? Just kiss each other already.

Iris screamed and everyone started clapping. I pulled her close to me and sneaked one arm around her waist. I cupped her face with my other hand and captured her lips in a loving kiss. I poured all my love for her into that kiss. She wrapped her arms around my neck as I slipped my tongue inside her mouth. I broke the kiss then pecked her forehead.

Chris: I love you so much my dear wife.

I said and she smiled cheekily.

Cassie: I love you too my sweet hubby.

She replied and we hugged each other tightly.

CHAPTER 29

CASSIE'S POV:-

I opened my eyes and stretched my arms above my head. I looked around and sat up on the bed abruptly. I sighed in relief when I remembered that I was in the room of a beautiful rented house. I was on my honeymoon. Finally, we were together. And I knew he would not let anyone do us apart. I was still waiting for him to make a move on me. He did not touch me. He said he wanted everything to be perfect. And he also told me that he wanted me to feel every moment of it. He wanted the memory of our first time patched forever in our chests. The idea was great. So I did not protest. I also wanted my time with him in bed to be memorable forever.

I looked at him with a warm feeling inside my chest. His lips were slightly apart from each other. I grinned as a mischievous plan made its way to my mind. I sat up on his stomach and leaned in. I captured his lower lip between my lips and sucked it hard. He growled lowly into his chest and opened his eyes slowly. My cheeks burned as I looked at his swollen lip. I started chewing my nails in nervousness. He chuckled and grabbed my hand. He kissed my palm then sat up on the bed with me still on his lap.

Chris: Are you sure? You want this?

He asked me in a worried tone. I smiled because I knew he loved me so much that he could not even think about taking me without my permission. I wrapped my arms around his waist and rested my head on his bicep.

Cassie: Yes! I am sure. I want to do this. I want us to start a life with each other. Have kids and live happily together forever.

I replied honestly. He smiled and cupped my face with one of his hands. He did not say anything but nodded his head. He leaned in and pecked my cheek. His other hand made its way into my lacy nighty and crawled up towards my tits. He pinched my nipple lightly and I gasped. He smiled and pulled my nighty off of me. He then gently laid me down on the bed. I was only in my panties. My breasts were on display for him.

My cheeks burned and I shivered under his gaze. I tried to cover my breasts with my hands. But he grabbed both of my wrists and pinned them above my head. With a serious look on his face, he shook his head almost in a warning way. I gulped seeing his firm stare at me and nodded my head. He let go of my wrists and started drooling over me again. He smirked widely as he leaned in and sucked the soft skin of my neck. I moaned loudly.

He made his way towards my breasts. He took one of my nipples into his mouth. I gasped as he grazed my nipple lightly between his teeth. He moaned softly with my nipple still into his mouth. He moved towards the other breast of mine. He took my other nipple into his mouth, while he was punching the wet nipple he had released from his mouth. I giggled as I felt his tongue tickling my nipple. His tongue was drawing invisible and wet circles around my nipple. I shivered again and he chuckled.

His hand crawled down towards my panties. He stared into my eyes as if asking my permission. I moaned softly and he smiled. His fingers touched my already wet core and I moaned loudly with pleasure. He captured my lips in a toe curling kiss. I parted my lips and his tongue slipped into my mouth. As I was enjoying his tongue caressing my tongue in a very loving way, I felt his smirk was back on his face. I wondered what he was up to.

He dipped one of his fingers inside my wet core. I moaned into his mouth as he pulled his finger out only to push it back.

Chris: So wet! So ready for me.

Chris whispered huskily into my ear. I rested my hand on his bare shoulder. I bit his shoulder as I felt myself getting closer to my orgasm. I arched my back as I came hard. He then went all the way down and dipped his head between my legs. My breath hitched as he rubbed my wet pussy from the top of the panties. I shivered when he pecked my pussy with my panties still on. He pulled my panties off and parted my pussy lips with his fingers.

Chris: The scent of your core is driving me crazy, Candy. I can say it will be delicious.

He said in a teasing tone. My cheeks burned hearing him. I jumped as his tongue touched my wet core. He started licking my wet core like the chocolate was all over it. He was moaning and licking my core.

He sat up again and got rid of his boxers. I took a deep breath to calm my excitement. He pulled out a condom from the drawer of the bedside table. I grabbed his hand and shook my head.

Cassie: We both have longed too much for happinesses. It is our time to hold hands and start searching for our happinesses. It is our time to start our family.

Hearing me, he smiled widely and cupped my face with one of his hands. His thumb was caressing my cheek lovingly.

Chris: You sure, you want to do that? There will be no way back once I will be done.

He asked me and I nodded my head to reassure him. I was ready to start a family. I wanted to have his children. I wanted to have a life with him. And I was ready to face all the challenges with him

by my side till the end of the line. He threw the condom pack on the floor and positioned himself between my legs.

Chris: I will be slow and gentle. But if you feel any kind of pain, let me know. Are we understood?

He asked me and I nodded my head with a wide smile. He grabbed his already erect shaft and stroked it a few times. Then he teased my core with the tip of his shaft. I moaned loudly as he slowly pushed himself inside me, stretching my walls with his iron hard shaft. His hand reached my core and with the pad of his thumb, he started teasing my clitoris.

He pushed himself further inside me. He leaned in and started sucking my nipples. Every move he made, increased my excitement more and more. Once my walls were fully stretched, he pulled himself out slowly, then pushed himself back in slowly. He was so slow and gentle. But I wanted him to thrust me hard and fast.

He grabbed both of my wrists and pinned them above my head. I frowned because I did not understand what he was up to. He slowly pulled himself out then again pushed himself in. Frustrated with his slow pace, I huffed in anger.

Cassie: Will you speed up already?

I asked him and he growled, making me jump.

Chris: You are not the boss here, Cassie. I am the boss at our home, in our bedroom, on our bed and also in our lives. You will be the one who has to submit to me.

He said in a teasing tone. He did not stop. He kept moving inside me slowly. I smiled and tried to get my hands free from his hold but he growled again in warning.

Chris: You can not touch me until we are done. And if I pace up the speed, it will end so soon. And I want our time to be memorable.

He said and I nodded my head. It was like a torture but it was more pleasurable than anything. His hard shaft became harder inside me. With every thrust, he went deeper inside me. My legs started shaking as I felt a knot in the pit of my stomach.

Chris: Don't cum just now. Hold it inside.

He said and I shook my head.

Cassie: I can't hold it. Please, let me cum.

I begged him and he just chuckled. I held my breath and shut my eyes tightly to keep myself from release. I heard his growl and I opened my eyes again.

Chris: Now! Cum with me my dear wife.

He ordered me and I happily obliged. I came hard as he also released a loud growl and unloaded his warm seed inside me. It felt like he filled my lower abdomen with his seed. Maybe I felt that because of such an intense orgasm. But he was right. I can still remember the intensity and the hotness of our first sex. And it was magical.

CHAPTER 30

CASSIE'S POV:-

I woke up the next morning. After the first time, Chris decided to spend our whole day at the rent house. We stayed together. I cooked lunch and dinner for us. Chris helped me. We played games, then we danced together. Then after dinner, Chris and I bathed together. I could not help but smile whenever I thought about our future. I could not help but think about the good news we would soon have.

I looked at Chris. He was sleeping peacefully with me. He was lying on his stomach and one of his arms was on my stomach. I snuggled closer to him and pecked his cheek. He smiled but did not open his eyes. I shook him a bit. He frowned but did not wake up. I rolled my eyes and crawled out of the bed.

I stepped into the bathroom and did my morning business. I then turned on the shower and hopped into the soothing hot water. I took my time and washed my body and my hair. Once done, I wrapped a towel around my body and stepped out of the bathroom. I looked at Chris who was still into his dreamland. He was snoring and that made me giggle. I shot his video while he was snoring.

I then went to the closet and wore my casual jeans and t-shirt. I stepped out of the closet. For the last time I tried to wake him up. When he did not wake up, I sighed and exited the bedroom.

I stepped into the kitchen and looked around. I decided to prepare french toast for Chris. I knew how much he loved vanilla french toast for breakfast. I gathered all the ingredients but the milk had expired. I sighed and went back to the bedroom. I wore my coat and grabbed the car keys. I pecked his cheek and stepped out of the bedroom. I knew I needed to shop if I wanted to surprise him with his favorite breakfast.

I went towards the garage and unlocked it. But before I could have opened the car door, someone covered my mouth and my nose with a handkerchief. I tried to scream but all my screams died inside my mouth. That hideous smell, I smelled it again. I knew my world was tearing apart and I was again helpless. Soon the darkness engulfed me and I lost consciousness.

CHRIS' POV:-

I woke up abruptly when I heard someone banging the door of the rent house, crazily. I crawled out of the bed and wore my bathrobe.

Chris: Cassie, where are you?

I asked when I did not see my angel around. Whoever was on the door, they were not stopping at all. They were constantly banging the door like they would break it and jump into the rent house. I ran towards the door and opened it. The owner of the house was there with a few people. I controlled my anger then asked him in a calmed tone.

Chris: What is the matter, Mr Grill? Why are you banging the door like you would break it?

Hearing my questions, they exchanged looks then looked back at me. I frowned because I could see something was wrong.

Mr Grill: Mr, your wife. She is abducted. I just saw a man dragging her to his car then he hopped in and drove away.

Mr Grill, the owner of our rental house said and my eyes almost popped out of my sockets.

Chris: What are you talking about? My wife is at home.

I said and went back into the house. I looked everywhere but they were right. Cassie was not at home. She was nowhere to be found.

Chris: When did that happen?

I asked Mr Grill and he sat beside me.

Mr Grill: I was inside my garden for my workout. A few minutes ago I saw that. I tried to stop him but it was no use. So, I came here to tell you. Since then I have been banging your door. But you did not open the door.

Mr Grill replied and I nodded my head.

Mr Grill: We must call the cops. It will help you to find your wife. Let me call the cops, Mr Hunt.

Mr Grill said and pulled his phone out of his pocket. He called the cops and informed them with the situation. I ran towards the bedroom and grabbed my phone from the nightstand. I quickly unlocked my phone and dialled Mr Wolf's number. It took him a few seconds, he picked up after the fourth bell.

Mr Wolf: Kids nowadays, they will not even let their parents live for a few days. What is wrong?

Agent Wolf asked me and I wiped a tear that had escaped from my eye.

Chris: It's Cassie, agent Wolf. Someone abducted her. I do not know who took her and how did that happen?

I replied in a guilty tone.

Agent Wolf: What? Where were you when all that happened to my daughter? Let me tell you one thing, Chris. If anything happens to my daughter, I will blow up your head.

Agent Wolf threatened me. But I did not reply to him. It was my fault. I should have woken up when she was trying to wake me up. But my rest time was more important for me than my beloved wife. I did not think that all would happen or I would have woken up.

Chris: She did not even tell me where she was going. She just grabbed her bag and left without telling me. I just don't know what to do.

I replied in a panicked tone. I was alone in that country. I did not know anyone there. I was in panic mode because I did not know anyone there.

Agent Wolf: Let me see what I can do. I have someone in Perth who can help you. I will try to reach them. Till then, you should just wait there. I will get back to you as soon as I can. And I will try to be by your side. I can not promise that because we don't know if I will get any flights.

Agent Wolf replied. I sighed and sat on the couch near me.

Chris: I will be waiting for your response.

I said and hung up. I knew I could not do much. So I did as agent Wolf had told me to do.

CHAPTER 31 .

CHRIS' POV:-

Agent Wolf: Let me see what I can do. I have someone in Perth who can help you. I will try to reach them. Till then, you should just wait there. I will get back to you as soon as I can. And I will try to be by your side. I can not promise that because we don't know if I will get any flights.

Agent Wolf replied. I sighed and sat on the couch near me.

Chris: I will be waiting for your response.

I said and hung up. I knew I could not do much. So I did as agent Wolf had told me to do. The wait was long and it was nowhere to end. I was walking back and forth. I just did not understand anything. I did not know how anyone could abduct my wife. I didn't even know how the hell it happened. I was eagerly waiting for agent Wolf to get back to me. I was checking my phone after every five minutes. I just wanted to know that she was fine. I was praying that it would be just a misunderstanding. She would come back home safely. But somewhere deep inside me, I knew something was more than just wrong.

As an hour passed I went back to our bedroom to change my clothes. I took a quick shower and changed my clothes. I brushed my teeth and stepped out of the bathroom. I grabbed my mobile and my wallet from the bedside table. I stuffed them both into my jacket pocket. I then looked for the car keys. To my surprise, the car keys were gone. I looked everywhere into the room but the keys were not there at all. I stepped out of the bedroom and ran towards the main door of the rent house. I stepped out of the house and looked around.

Then I saw something I had not noticed at all. The garage door was pulled up. I went to the garage and looked around. There, on the ground I found the car keys and her bag as well. Her phone was on the ground as well. It's screen was fully destroyed, like someone crushed it under their feet on purpose.

A woman's voice: What had happened here, Mr Hunt?

I heard a voice of a woman from behind. I stood up and turned to look at her. I frowned my brows because I had never seen that face in my life before.

Chris: I am sorry, ma'am. Do I know you?

I asked her in a confused tone. She smiled and shook her head. That made me wonder who she was and what she exactly was doing at our rent house?

Unknown woman: My name is Mrs Norie Rutherford. You don't know me but I kinda know you somehow. Let's go inside and talk. We can not talk out here. Trust me.

She said and I frowned. But of course, I was not an ill-mannered person. I nodded my head and we walked towards the door. I opened the door and invited her in. My mind was only with my wife but I could not just keep a woman standing at the door. It was not something a man of Hunt's family would do. I offered her a glass of water. She thanked me and downed it's content in one go.

Chris: Pardon me if you mind, but I am kinda in a hurry Mrs Rutherford.

I said as soon as she set the glass on the table.

Mrs Rutherford: I know why you are in a hurry, Mr Hunt. I am here to help you. I am a senior investigation officer of Scotland Yard. Agent Wolf had sent me here.

She replied with a small smile on her face. I nodded my head.

Chris: How do you know, Mr Wolf? If I may ask?

I asked her and she nodded her head.

Mrs Rutherford: I guess, a week before your wedding, I went to New York City to find my husband. It was agent Wolf who helped me find my husband. If it wasn't for him, he would have died long ago.

She replied in a calmed tone. She really looked like a professional investigator. I nodded my head hearing her answer.

Mrs Rutherford: Now calm down Mr Hunt and tell me whatever you know. I promise I will not let anyone hurt her. I promise you before the sun goes down, your wife will be in front of you.

She said with a confidence I had never felt in a woman's voice. She was surely a woman with power. I sighed in relief and nodded my head.

Chris: Thank you, Mrs Rutherford. I will never forget it.

I replied and she bowed her head a bit.

Mrs Rutherford: Now tell me what do you know, Mr Hunt? When did you see her last time?

She asked me questions in a serious tone.

Chris: Last night I saw last in front of me. I think she was trying to wake me up in the morning but I was too tired. If I knew she would be abducted like this, I would have woken up. I did not know she was going outside. I did not even know why all of the sudden she needed to go out?

I replied in a panicked tone. I ran my fingers through my hair.

Mrs Rutherford: Calm down, Mr Hunt. Your panic is not going to help your wife at all. You need to remember everything you know and tell me. How and when did you find out that your wife is abducted?

She replied in a calmed tone then again she asked me a question.

Chris: I heard someone banging the door like they would break it. Cassie was nowhere to be found. I went to the door and saw the owner of this rental house. He said he saw someone taking my wife away. He tried to stop him but it was no use. That was why they came to me to inform me.

I replied and she nodded her head.

Mrs Rutherford: Do you have anyone in mind who can abduct her or try to hurt her. You need to tell me everything.

She asked me. I thought for a few minutes then shook my head.

Chris: No one specific in my mind. We don't know anyone here in Scotland.

I replied and she nodded her head.

Mrs Rutherford: I remember agent Wolf mentioned that your wife was abducted before. But now she had learned to defend herself. Do you think that same person could be behind this abduction as well?

She asked me and I frowned my brows.

Chris: I don't think so he would try to make that mistake ever again knowing her father is a senior FBI agent.

I replied and she took a deep breath.

Mrs Rutherford: You never know what these bastards could do.

She said and that made me think otherwise.

Chris: I can not say anything about that. I did not see him. Mr Grill, the owner of this rental house saw him.

I replied and she nodded her head.

Mrs Rutherford: Then let's go and talk to the owner of this rental house.

She replied and stood up. I also stood up and we both walked towards the door. I opened the door and we stepped out of the house. I took her to the owner's house and rang the doorbell. He opened the door in a minute. He looked at Mrs Rutherford and bowed his head in respect.

Mr Grill: Mrs Rutherford, you came to my house. This must be my lucky day.

Mr Grill said and that made me think who she actually was.

CHAPTER 32

CHRIS' POV:-

Mrs Rutherford: Then let's go and talk to the owner of this rental house.

She replied and stood up. I also stood up and we both walked towards the door. I opened the door and we stepped out of the house. I took her to the owner's house and rang the doorbell. He opened the door in a minute. He looked at Mrs Rutherford and bowed his head in respect.

Mr Grill: Mrs Rutherford, you came to my house. This must be my lucky day.

Mr Grill said and that made me think who she actually was. I was staring at them both with my mouth agape. Mrs Rutherford cleared her throat and I came back to reality. Mrs Rutherford signalled Mr Grill and he opened the door wide for us to come in.

Mrs Rutherford did not waste any more time. She pulled out her phone from her bag and opened the gallery. Mrs Rutherford showed Mr Grill some photos, I was able to see those as well.

Mrs Rutherford: Did you see this man who was taking Mrs Hunt?

Mrs Rutherford asked Mr Grill and held her phone in front of his eyes. He stared at the photos for a good minute then he nodded his head.

Mr Grill: Yes, Mrs Rutherford. It was him. I can not forget that ugly bastard.

He replied in an angry tone. Mrs Rutherford raised her brows and we both exchanged looks.

Mrs Rutherford: Looks like you really do not like him. Can I ask why?

Mrs Rutherford asked him and he chuckled darkly.

Mr Grill: I have my own daughters. I can understand how it feels to have one abducted like this. If my son would be here, he would have stopped that bastard. I am sorry Mr Hunt, I could not do much for that poor girl. But don't you worry, Mrs Rutherford will soon bring her back, unharmed.

Mr Grill replied and we both nodded our heads.

Mrs Rutherford: Can you tell me what you saw? What really happened with Mrs Hunt? Tell me everything.

Mrs Rutherford asked Mr Grill and he nodded his head.

Mr Grill: I stepped out of my house to do some workouts, like I do everyday. I saw Mrs Hunt stepped out of the house. She did not see me but I saw her. She went straight to the garage. There

was a car parked in front of her house. As she opened the garage, a man stepped out of that car and he quickly walked towards Mrs Hunt. He had a handkerchief in his hand. As he went closer to Mrs Hunt, he covered her mouth and her nose with that handkerchief. In a few seconds, I saw Mrs Hunt lost consciousness.

Mr Grill replied and Mrs Rutherford nodded her head.

Mrs Rutherford: Mr Hunt told me you were here with some people from the neighborhood. How many people were you exactly?

She asked Mr Grill.

Mr Grill: Including me, we were seven men.

He replied.

Mrs Rutherford: And seven men together failed to save a woman, why?

Mrs Rutherford asked him the same question I wanted to ask.

Mr Grill: As he was dragging her towards his car, I started shouting. Other men also came out and we all went to him. But before we could do anything for Mrs Hunt, he pulled his gun out of his jacket pocket and put it on Mrs Hunt's head. He said, if anyone came near me, I will first shoot her then myself. So there will be no more fuss. Who would have cared about that bastard, but I was worried about that poor girl. That was why we all stepped back. Including me, all other six men were also old. Or otherwise, we would have done something to save her.

Mr Grill replied and she nodded her head again. Mrs Rutherford patted his shoulder and gave him a small smile.

Mrs Rutherford: Mr Grill, you did whatever you could. Leave rest upon me. The information you have given me is more than enough for anyone to find her. Don't worry, by the sun set, she will be back home, safe and sound.

She replied and Mr Grill nodded his head. Mrs Rutherford stepped out of the house and I followed her.

Mrs Rutherford: You can go back home now Mr Hunt. You should go and tell everything to agent Wolf. While I will search your wife and bring her back home. Make sure I will find you home when your wife will be back. She will need you.

Mrs Rutherford said and I nodded my head. She was right. Cassie would need me whenever she would come back. And I wanted to be there for her. So I did as I was told. I went towards the rental house and Mrs Rutherford went towards her car. She hopped into her car and quickly drove off. I also stepped into the house and went towards the kitchen to cook something for Cassie.

CASSIE'S POV:-

I opened my eyes only to find myself into an unknown place. My head felt like someone had hit my head with a hammer. I felt sleepy and tired. I shut my eyes and tried to remember what happened. Then I remembered, I was going to the market to buy some milk so I would make Chris his favorite breakfast. And before I would have hopped into my car, someone covered my mouth and I smelled that hideous smell again.

I sat up and looked around. Then I saw him again. The devil of my life. He was standing by the window, looking at the sky that was changing its colors. That made me realize that I was out cold for only God knows how many hours. My heart was near to stop and my palms were getting sweaty. The only person I did not want to see in my life, the only person I prayed not to see again, had abducted me again. And I did not know how and when my dad and Chris would find me. Last time, it took them almost a year to get me out of that hell.

I hugged my stomach tightly as I remembered that Chris and I were planning to start a family together. His seed was inside me and I wanted to start my family with Chris. But I did not know if Hendrick would rape me again, would Chris be able to accept me and my child. Only God knew why I was being tested like that again. I did not understand what harm I had done to go through that hell again.

Hendrick Black: Finally, you are awake!

I heard the voice of the devil and my heart almost jumped out of my rib cage because of the fear I was feeling inside my chest.

CHAPTER 33

HENDRICK BLACK'S POV:-

TWO WEEKS AGO:-

I was into my mansion, working on a project that was pending. Of course, no one was able to capture me. It was near to impossible. Her father, agent Wolf came twice but he failed to arrest me both times. I thought he would take his lesson and would never come back again. But he was as stubborn as his daughter Cassandra was. He did not stop his stupidity. He annoyed me very much but I was bearing him just because he was the father of Cassandra.

The door of my study opened and I looked up. It was none other than my personal assistant, Quinn. He hesitantly walked towards my desk. I rolled my eyes over his fear and shut the file that I was working on.

Hendrick Black: What is wrong with you now? Why are you all pale like you are ill or something?

I asked him in an annoyed tone while looking straight into his eyes. He was looking everywhere but into my eyes. That made me suspicious. He did that only when he was sure I would be mad at him. I snapped my fingers twice in front of his eyes. He took a deep breath and forced a smile on his face. But the fear in his eyes was still there.

Quinn: Boss! There is something you need to know. As you had sent me for the conference, I was not able to keep my eyes and ears everywhere. I also just came to know right now and came straight to inform you either.

He started explaining himself. I inhaled deeply and gave him my annoyed look. I knew how dramatic Quinn was. So I decided to get back to work. I signalled him to keep on going while I picked up the file again and started reading it.

Quinn: Boss! Miss Wolf is getting married. In fact, today is her wedding.

He said those words and the world around me froze for a good minute. I slammed my file on the desk and stood up. I grabbed his collar and pulled him close to me.

Hendrick Black: What the fuck are you talking about, Quinn? When did that all happen? Why did you not come to know earlier? Where the fuck were you?

I roared all these questions on his face. He started shaking in fear. I could see he was already sweaty. I pushed him backwards and he fell abruptly on the chair he was sitting on.

Quinn: Boss! I would have told you before if I would have known as well. They are already married. No one knows when but they got married. Nobody was there, not even their families. Only Mr Hunt with Miss Wolf. They got married in Miss Wolf's apartment. I came to know when the new owners shifted into that apartment.

He said that all in one breath. He did not bother to look at me. He knew I would not be just mad but furious as well. He had made the biggest mistake of his life. And he knew that could cost him just not a few months but his whole life. But at that time, I was not in the mood to talk to him. I grabbed my mobile and my car keys. I ran towards my car and quickly drove off.

A WEEK AGO, In Perth:-

I stepped out of the apartment door of my twin brother and went towards the elevator. I visited him to get his help as I knew no one in Perth. But as he was the most stubborn person in the whole family, he said he would never help a rapist like me. If he would just understand, I did everything for Cassandra. She can never imagine how much I loved her.

Of course, I was not the only child of my parents. I had a twin brother, an identical twin actually. And my parents named him as Kendrick. He was younger than me. But he did not live with us in New York.

About fourteen years ago, my mom caught my alcoholic dad cheating on her. Instead of going to her brother's city, my mom decided to go to London. Her sister like friend Erica, lived there. When everything got sorted and we were coming back home, Kendrick made his decision to stay with aunt Erica's family. Mom tried her best but Kendrick was stubborn. He said he can't break a heart.

PRESENT TIME:-

As he had refused to help me, I needed to make a plan of my own. So I decided to follow them day and night. I knew I would get a chance to abduct her again. And I did. She stepped out of that house all alone that day. Taking the advantage, I went to her and made her inhale the chloroform. She lost consciousness and I abducted her. Some old people from the neighborhood came to save her but I stopped them as well. I took her to an abandoned factory that we still owned.

I was standing by the window and was looking at the sky. She was still out cold. I was waiting for her to wake up. Soon I heard some noises. I looked back at her. She was sitting on the ground, hugging her stomach like she was protecting something precious.

CASSIE'S POV:-

Hendrick Black: Finally, you are awake!

I heard the voice of the devil and my heart almost jumped out of my rib cage because of the fear I was feeling inside my chest.

Cassie: You, you did that again? Why have you brought me here? Where am I?

I asked him all these questions. I tried to keep myself as strong as I could.

Hendrick Black: You are in a factory I own. And this time, I didn't make that mistake again to hire someone. So no one here to help you. You and I are all alone here again. Who is going to help you this time? I can do anything to you and no one would even hear your calls.

He replied and my heart stopped for a second. I took a deep breath to control my nerves and my fear as well. I couldn't just show him my weakness.

Cassie: Do whatever you want. But I swear to God, I will never give you whatever you want. You will never have me. You destroyed my life before and now you are back to destroy it again. I will kill myself right here.

I yelled at Hendrick Black angrily but instead of stepping away from me, he started laughing hysterically. I balled my fists in anger seeing his reaction.

Hendrick Black: Go ahead, kill yourself. Once you will be dead, I will kill myself as well, then we both will be together forever, buried in the ground.

He replied in a relaxed tone. He threw a gun in front of me and I picked it up. The gun was already loaded. At that moment I was only thinking about Chris. But the knew I had no other choice but to kill myself. I pointed the gun onto my throat.

A woman's voice: Don't kill yourself for someone as useless as him.

I heard a woman yelling. I looked around and found a woman stepping out of the shadows. A hopeful smile made its way to my lips as I looked at the woman. She was the same woman who had come to my house before my wedding.

Hendrick Black: Who the hell are you?

Hendrick asked her then launched himself at that woman. She didn't move an inch away from her place. As he was about a foot away from her, she blocked his punch by her left arm. Then she turned around and elbowed his stomach hard. He groaned in pain and knelt on the ground. She then punched the back of his head hard enough to make him out cold for a while. He fell on the ground as her punch collided with Hendrick's head. Once he was down, she stripped off my shirt and my scarf. She tied his hands and his legs with her shirt and her scarf. She wasn't just brave but also very smart.

Once he was secured, she called someone to come and get us. I went to her and pulled her in a bear hug. She rubbed my back to make me feel better. I was shaking with fear, fear of losing everything I had worked hard to build. She broke the hug and took me towards the table. We both sat on the table and she squeezed my hand a bit.

Unknown woman: You are safe now, Mrs Hunt. Soon, Harris will be here. He will take you to your husband. You are safe now. But what about tomorrow or the day after tomorrow? Have you ever thought about why he attempted to abduct you again?

She asked me and I shook my head with teary eyes.

Unknown woman: It's because he knows that you are afraid of him.

She replied and I looked at me with my mouth agape. I didn't know how she learned all that about me. Maybe my dad told her.

CHAPTER 34

CASSIE'S POV:-

Unknown woman: You are safe now, Mrs Hunt. Soon, Harris will be here. He will take you to your husband. You are safe now. But what about tomorrow or the day after tomorrow? Have you ever thought about why he attempted to abduct you again?

She asked me and I shook my head with teary eyes.

Unknown woman: It's because he knows that you are afraid of him.

She replied and I looked at her with my mouth agape. I didn't know how she learned all that about me. Maybe my dad told her.

Cassie: Did my dad tell you about this? How do you know that?

I asked the unknown woman in a confused tone. She gave me a small smile.

Unknown woman: It was evident. Your eyes were screaming that you are afraid of him. I can still see that fear in your eyes. My question is, why fear him? Who is he to fear?

Hearing her question, a sob escaped my lips. Tears filled in my eyes and I narrowed my eyes.

Cassie: Have you ever felt like the sand is slipping through your fingers? Like you are trying hard to hold it on but it always slips off of your hands. That's what I felt for about ten months while I was abducted by him last time. What I did not know, he was controlling my life for years. He first gave me dreams then snatched them away.

I replied in a shaky voice. She rubbed my back and pulled me in a sisterly hug.

Hendrick Black: And I will do that again. You think tying me with these pieces of shit would protect you. I will soon be out of these and then I will do whatever I want.

We heard Hendrick Black roaring from the other side of the factory. Hearing him, I started shivering. As for the unknown woman, hearing his clams, she started laughing hysterically like Hendrick had cracked a joke.

Unknown woman: We will see that. Anyways Mrs Hunt, as we were talking. I will tell you something my dad had told me a long time ago. I can still remember, it was my fourth birthday. My father came back home from his work. He was a little late. Actually, he was too late. He missed my birthday party. He was a police officer.

She started telling me a story and I wiped my tears.

Cassie: What happened then?

I asked.

Unknown woman: I was so angry with my dad that I didn't even have dinner. I did not open my gifts. Hell, I did not even enjoy my own birthday party. To cheer me up, my mom asked for a magician for a magical show. The magician came and he kinda took my teddy bear I loved. I got scared and ran up to my bedroom. Those were the reasons why I didn't enjoy my own birthday party.

She replied and I chuckled.

Unknown woman: My dad came back home. He was the only one who made me open the door of my bedroom. He came in and apologized for being late to my birthday party. I was angry at him, but I was more afraid of the magician that I actually forgot about my anger towards my father. He came to me and laid on the bed beside me. I quickly hugged him tightly. I think all the girls in this world feel safe when we are with our fathers.

She added and I nodded my head.

Cassie: Then what happened?

I asked her curiously.

Unknown woman: Then, he told me something that is still patched on my heart.

She replied with a wide smile on her face.

Cassie: What was that?

I asked her again.

Unknown woman: He first explained to me why he could not make it to my birthday party. Then I told him about the magician. He smiled and gave me my teddy. He said, sweetie, you should not be the one to fear people. Instead, you have to be a living nightmare for all the bad people out there. He said, you should not be afraid of anyone. Everyone is a human like you are. So you shouldn't be afraid of the people who will try to scare you, instead, you have to scare them away. He gave me a quote, Mercy for the oppressor is oppression to the oppressed. That quote patched up on my heart that day. And I still keep that in my mind wherever I step out of my house for my job.

She replied and I smiled. She really did something to me. That quote was like... a shield. Something that would give power to fight. Power to stand up. Power to be able to take what was mine. Power to fight till my happinesses would be secured.

Hendrick Black: You think you can undo whatever I have done with her. She will fear me till the day she will die.

Hendrick Black said from behind and chuckled like he had said the most obvious thing. The unknown woman hopped off of the table and I did the same after her. She went towards him and I followed her behind. She raised her hand to slap him hard on his face. But before her hand could reach Hendrick's face, he was already on the ground, groaning in pain. Before that unknown woman could slap him, I kicked his balls hard enough to make him lick the ground.

Cassie: Nobody asked your opinion. Keep your mouth shut.

I yelled at him angrily. I then knelt down beside him and grabbed a fist full of his hair. He groaned in pain as I pulled his hair abruptly.

Cassie: She is right. You are strong because I did not do anything against you. Chris was right, if you did it again with someone I would be the first one to blame because I did not take any action against you. Who are you? Why should I be afraid of you? She is right, you are just a human.

I said and let go of his hair.

Unknown male voice: Well, well, well... Beautiful ladies, are you okay?

Unknown woman smiled as we heard a masculine voice. We turned around and found a man standing at the entrance with a few police officers behind him. The officers came in and arrested Hendrick Black.

Unknown Man: Are you okay, Mrs Hunt?

He asked me and I nodded my head.

Cassie: I am fine. Thank you.

I replied to that unknown man then I turned to look at her again. I grabbed both of her hands and gave her a hopeful smile.

Unknown woman: Your father is a brave man, Mrs Hunt. Just stand up for yourself. I know he will do everything in his power to throw Hendrick Black behind the bars. All you have to do is to stand up for yourself.

She motivated me and I nodded my head with a wide smile.

Cassie: I promise, I will not hide in the darks anymore. I will do whatever is needed to be done. I will stand up for myself so the court would punish Hendrick. I will not back away, not anymore.

I replied with a wide smile. She pulled me in a sisterly hug and rubbed my back.

CHAPTER 35

CASSIE'S POV:-

We all exited the factory together. Police officers took Hendrick Black away while that unknown man drove us towards the rental house where Chris and I had been living.

The car stopped in front of the rental house. We all hopped out of the car. The unknown woman rang the doorbell. I smiled as Chris opened the door after a minute.

Chris: Cassie! Oh my God, are you okay? Did he hurt you?

Chris asked me and pulled me in a protective hug. He just bombarded me with all those questions.

Unknown woman: Mr Hunt, your wife is perfectly fine. Before he could touch her hair, I was able to stop him. And before he could scare her anymore, Mrs Hunt kicked him hard on his balls. Don't worry. Harris will take care of him until agent Wolf will be here.

She replied to Chris and his eyes popped out of its sockets as she mentioned how I had acted in front of Hendrick Black. He then smiled and kissed the top of my head.

Chris: Thank you so much, Mrs Rutherford. If it wasn't for you, we would still be looking for Cassie. You really came as a flicker of hope. I don't know what I would have done if it wasn't for you.

Chris thanked her and she nodded her head.

Mrs Rutherford: I did not do anything. I just did my job. Yes, I do have my personal relations with agent Wolf since he was the one who helped me find my husband. Whatever he did for me, it was unforgettable. But what I did here was my job. And it was nothing as compared to all that agent Wolf had done for me.

Mrs Rutherford replied and Chris nodded his head.

Mrs Rutherford: I suggest you not to live here anymore. As we were told, Hendrick Black was alone. But still, I can not take any chances.

Mrs Rutherford suggested us and we both looked at her with frowned faces.

Chris: So where can we go? Agent Wolf would be here by tomorrow morning but still.

Chris replied to her in a confused tone. I exchanged looks with her friend then they both smirked.

Mrs Rutherford: You can come with me. You will be under my protection. Plus, I would be less worried about you both and until agent Wolf would be here, he would not be worried about you either.

Mrs replied and we both smiled.

Cassie: I think we can do that.

I replied with a cheeky smile. Mrs Rutherford smiled and nodded her head. Chris guided me in and also invited Mrs Rutherford with her friend into the house.

Mrs Rutherford: You better eat something before you will pack up. We can wait for you both.

Mrs Rutherford suggested and Chris nodded his head. Suddenly, Mrs Rutherford started breathing heavily. She would have fallen if it was not for her friend. He grabbed her by her arms and we took her to the living room. Her friend Harris made her sit on one of the couches. Then he sat down on the ground. Chris went into the kitchen and brought a bottle of water.

Harris: Are you okay, Rie?

He asked Mrs Rutherford and she just nodded her head. She started taking deep breaths, as if she was having trouble breathing. Chris offered her a bottle of water and she downed it's cold content in one go. Like she was thirsty for hours.

Harris: You need something to eat. It looks like you are facing a low sugar problem. When did you eat last, today?

He asked her and she nervously scratched the back of her head.

Mrs Rutherford: In the morning.

She replied with a guilty smile on her face. Harris shook his head in anger.

Harris: You know you have to eat on time. If anything happens to your baby, Mr Rutherford will skin me alive then he will roast me and I will be a feast for the crows.

He scolded her and Chris and I both looked at her with our mouths agape.

Chris: Wait what? You are pregnant! Why did you not tell us? And you went to find Cassie and fight Hendrick with a baby inside you!

Chris asked her in a shocked tone while she nodded her head proudly.

Cassie: Oh God! You need to eat something right now, Mrs Rutherford.

I said and grabbed Mrs Rutherford's hand. She stood up and squeezed my hand a bit.

Mrs Rutherford: Don't be too formal. Call me Norie, or Rie.

She said and I just nodded my head. I was surprised how a woman could be this brave. She fought him without any hesitations.

Chris: Come on, I had made spaghetti. Let's eat together.

Chris said and I licked my lips in excitement.

Cassie: You should try his spaghetti. He makes it the best way.

I said and Norie nodded her head. We all took our seats on the dining table and Chris served us all. We all enjoyed our late lunch together.

As soon as our bags were packed, Chris and I stepped out of the room and we went downstairs with our luggage. Norie smiled as she saw us and hopped off of the couch. We all stepped out of the rental house together. Chris locked the house then handed the keys to its owner. Norie thanked Mr Grill again for his help and we all went towards her car that was parked in front of the rental house. Harris had already called the rental car owner and they took away the car. We had already paid for both the car and the house. Harris then helped Chris with our luggage and then we all hopped into the car. Harris started the engine and drove off.

Norie: You can stay as long as you want. The guest house is loaded with everything you would need. But in case they missed anything, let me know. I will ask them to get you whatever you want.

Norie said with a smile on her face. I just smiled and nodded my head.

Cassie: We can't thank you enough for everything you have done for us. You are still doing a lot. How will we ever repay you?

I asked Norie with teary eyes.

Norie: You don't need to repay anything, Mrs Hunt. As I said, whatever I did or am doing, it is all part of my job.

She replied and we both nodded our heads with grateful smiles on our faces. I hugged Chris' arm tightly and rested my head on his shoulder. I inhaled his masculine scent deeply. It calmed my nerves and I again felt butterflies inside my stomach.

Harris parked the car in front of a huge mansion. It was bigger than the Hunt's mansion. We all hopped out of the car. A very beautiful old woman was standing at the door waiting for us. Norie went to her and she first pulled Norie in a bear hug. Then she asked Norie if she was okay. Once the old woman got satisfied, she looked at us. She came to us and greeted us with open arms.

Norie: Grandma, Mr and Mrs Hunt. They will be living with us for a few days. Till then, they are our guest. Mr and Mrs Hunt, this is Mr Rutherford's grandmother. She will guide you from here.

Norie introduced us to Mrs Rutherford. Mrs Rutherford asked the maids to take our luggage into the guest house then she guided us towards the guest house. We stepped into the guest house. It was beautiful and fully decorated. It was not home but it smelled like one.

Mrs Rutherford: You both can get fresh and take some rest. The dinner will soon be ready. Would you like to join us or would you like to have it here?

She asked us with a smile on her face.

Cassie: We would like to join you, Mrs Rutherford.

I replied and she nodded her head with a wide smile. She excused herself and we went towards the bedroom.

CHAPTER 36

CHRIS' POV:-

I stood up and offered my hand to my wife. She raised a brow at me.

Chris: Come on, don't tell me you don't trust your husband.

I said in a teasing tone and she rolled her eyes. She took my hand. I made her stand up. I then pulled her into the bathroom.

Cassie: What are you up to, Chris?

She asked me in a confused tone while trying to get her hand free from my hold. I smiled mischievously and pulled her towards me. She gasped loudly and her soft body collided with my hard one.

Chris: We are on honeymoon, do you not remember that? A couple should be steamy and playful during their honeymoons.

I replied to her and winked by the end of the sentence. Her cheeks turned pink and she buried her face into my chest.

Chris: Don't be shy, my dear sweet wife. I want you to be wild with me.

I teased her even more and she slapped my bicep playfully.

Cassie: Don't tease me like that. You are mean.

She replied to me with a cute pout on her face. I could not control myself seeing that innocent pout. I grabbed her face and slammed my lips on hers. Her eyes widened in shock and she moaned softly inside my mouth. I released her in a few seconds but she was already lost into that kiss. I chuckled and started stripping my clothes off.

Chris: Come on, get rid of your clothes. We are bathing together. Ever since our first bath together, I am not able to control myself. I like sharing the bathtub with you.

I said and she shivered hearing me. Once I was fully naked, I went to her and helped her to get stripped. Once she was naked, I filled the tub with warm water and added soap into the tub. I tested the water then hopped in. Then I offered her my hand and she smiled cheekily.

She bit her lower lip and accepted my hand and stepped into the bathtub. I spread my legs into the tub and she sat on my lap. She laid on top of me and I wrapped one of my arms around her. I

grabbed her hair and leaned in towards her shoulder. She started breathing heavily as she felt my hot breaths over the bear skin of her shoulder.

I chuckled and placed a wet kiss over her shoulder.

Chris: Spread your legs, Candy.

I whispered softly in her ear and she moaned. She was getting excited for me. That was what I wanted to do to her. I wanted her to be excited for me.

She spread her legs for me and shut her eyes. As if she knew what I was about to do to her and she wanted to enjoy it. My hand travelled down towards her wet flower. I rubbed her clitoris lightly and she gasped. I leaned in again and started sucking the skin of her neck.

Cassie: Chris, please stop playing with me. Fuck me, please.

She pleaded to me while breathing heavily. Her pleas made me feel so good. Knowing that she could not resist me. I was more than happy to give her whatever she wanted. But I wanted her to beg me more. I did not know why but her pleading tone made me so hard for her.

Chris: Not that fast, Candy. You need to try that a little harder.

I whispered in her ear in a seductive tone and she released an unsatisfied moan. She wanted me so bad, but she had to learn to ask me what she wanted. That was why I decided to tease her more.

I pushed two of my fingers inside her pussy. She moaned loudly and a smile made its way to her lips. I smirked mischievously as I knew I had fooled her. I started pumping my fingers in and out of her hole faster. Soon her legs started shaking and her moans became louder. As I felt she was close, I pulled my fingers out of her.

She did not say anything for a few minutes as she knew I was already hard for her. But when she noticed I did not do anything to satisfy her needs, she opened her eyes and turned to look at me. I behaved like an innocent man, as if I don't know what made her angry at me.

Cassie: Why did you stop? You can not just leave me hanging.

She asked me in a frustrated tone and I shrugged my shoulders carelessly.

Chris: I asked you what you want. When you did not reply, I just stopped. I can never force myself on you. You are my wife. A wife is not for single sided pleasure.

I replied like an innocent man. I was expecting her to curse me a few times then huff in anger then cry like a baby then she would eventually beg me to give her what she wants. But whatever she did, I was not expecting that from her.

She huffed in anger, as I had expected. I just smiled and shut my eyes. I was enjoying the warm water. But then she grabbed my hard shaft with one hand and almost squeezed my balls with the other hands. I moaned loudly when she did that. I opened my eyes and glared at her. She stuck her tongue out and positioned herself on my hard shaft. I was not sure what she had in mind.

She pushed my shaft inside her wet folds and I threw my head back in pleasure. I had never witnessed that sight of her before. She was taking the full charge, I did not give it to her. I liked the dominant side of my wife. It was more than hot and sexy. I grabbed her by her neck, but carefully. Then I kissed her hard. I broke the kiss and she started moving up and down.

I decided to add more pleasure into our steamy moment. I wrapped my arms around her waist and pulled her closer. I took one of her mounds into my mouth and sucked her nipple hard. She moaned loudly as I sucked her nipple. As I felt her nipple was hard inside my mouth, I released that one and took the other one inside my mouth. I suck it even harder than the last one. I released her nipple and she cupped my face. She started peppering wet kisses all over my face.

Her legs started shaking and I understood that she was close. I just smirked knowing that my wife did not need anything from me. She was born wild.

CHAPTER 37

CASSIE'S POV:-

Cassie: Chris, please stop playing with me. Fuck me, please.

I pleaded to Chris while breathing heavily. He was hard but I just did not understand why he was not doing anything. Why he was playing with me. I wanted him and he always knew what I wanted. He knew very well that I could not resist him at all. But still he was just teasing me and I did not like it. I want him inside me.

Chris: Not that fast, Candy. You need to try that a little harder.

He whispered in my ear in a seductive tone and I released an unsatisfied moan. I wanted him so bad, but I was just waiting and waiting. He was not doing anything. He was just teasing my clitoris. I did not ask for teasing. I asked him to fuck me.

I smiled widely as he pushed two of his fingers inside my pussy. I moaned loudly as he was finally getting started. He took too much longer and I was waiting for him to bury his shaft inside me deeply. He started pumping his fingers in and out of my hole faster. Soon my legs started shaking and my moans became louder. I was so close to release myself. But as my walls tightened up, he pulled his fingers out of my hole.

I did not say anything for a few minutes. I knew he was already hard for me. He wanted me as much as I wanted him. But he did not move or pushed himself inside me. I was running out of my patients. I opened my eyes after a few minutes and turned to look at him. He behaved like an innocent man. Like he did not know what was going on. As if he did not understand that he left me hanging with the cliff.

Cassie: Why did you stop? You can not just leave me hanging.

I asked him in a frustrated tone and he shrugged my shoulders carelessly. That made me feel very angry. He was behaving like he was a baby who did not know anything.

Chris: I asked you what you want. When you did not reply, I just stopped. I can never force myself on you. You are my wife. A wife is not for single sided pleasure.

He replied like an innocent man. I gritted my teeth hearing the lamest reason I have ever heard in my whole life. He just left me hanging and then he was enjoying my frustration. Maybe he was expecting something from me. I huffed in anger as I noticed him enjoying his time in the warm water. He closed his eyes and laid into the bathtub. But I smirked as a mischievous idea made its way to my mind.

I grabbed his hard shaft with one hand and almost squeezed his balls with the other hands. He moaned loudly when I squeezed his balls. He opened his eyes and glared at me. I stuck my tongue out playfully and positioned myself on his hard shaft. He gave me a confused look as he did not understand what I was up to. Whatever I did, he might have never dreamed about it.

I pushed his shaft inside my wet folds and he threw his head back in pleasure. I took the full charge. I did not give him a chance to understand what I was doing and that shocked him. He smirked mischievously and grabbed me by my neck, but he was still gentle. Then he kissed me hard. He kissed me like his life depends upon it. He broke the kiss as I started moving up and down.

He wrapped his arms around my waist and pulled me closer. I took one of my nipples in his mouth and sucked it hard. I moaned loudly as he sucked my nipple. It felt so good. As my nipple became hard inside his mouth, he released that one and took the other one inside his mouth. He sucked it even harder than the last one. I threw my head back in pleasure. He then released my nipple and I cupped his face. I started peppering wet kisses all over his face. I just love him so much and I wanted him to feel my love.

My legs started shaking and signalling me that I was getting closer to my release. He smirked mischievously as my walls tightened around his shaft. He then took the charge and started fucking me hard. I tried to control myself, I wanted to have more fun. But I could not control it longer and I came hard with moaning his name in pleasure. He did not take longer though. About five more minutes and he unloaded his warm seed inside me. He pulled himself out of me and I wrapped my arms around his neck.

After getting cleaned up, we both stepped out of the bathroom. He chose a dress for me. It was a blue fancy top with black skinny jeans. I liked his choice. Soon, we both heard a knock on our bedroom door.

Maid: Mr and Mrs Hunt, the dinner is ready. Grandma is waiting for you both.

A maid came and informed us.

Chris: We are coming.

Chris replied and offered me his hand. I happily took it and intertwined my fingers with his. He opened the door and we both went towards the mansion. We straight went to the dining hall where everyone was waiting for us

Mrs Rutherford: I wonder why Angus has not come back home?

Mrs Rutherford asked as she served dinner to us all.

Norie: He will be late, grandma. He texted me that he has a few important meetings to attend. That's why he would be late.

Norie replied and Mrs Rutherford nodded her head.

Mrs Rutherford: That's why my cub isn't home yet.

Mrs Rutherford replied and Norie nodded her head.

Mr Rutherford: See, you worry too much. Kids have grown up now. Don't worry. They will always come back home in the end.

Mr Rutherford said and Norie smiled. It did not feel like we did not know them. They all looked like we have known them for ages. They did not make us feel like strangers. It felt like we were home.

Norie: You can not hide it, Grandpa. Tell me honestly, you were the one worried about Angus?

Norie asked Mr Rutherford and he gave her an angry look. Charles Rutherford chuckled seeing their little fight.

Chris: This is very delicious, Mrs Rutherford. I have never tasted such a delicious butter chicken in my life.

Chris complimented Mrs Rutherford as he took his first bite and Norie nodded her head.

Norie: In a few days, you will say that about a million times, Mr Hunt. Grandma is the best.

Norie replied and Chris nodded his head.

Chris: I can say. I am already your fan. It's more than delicious.

He said and Mrs Rutherford thanked him. Then she also sat down and we all enjoyed our dinner together.

Talia Rutherford: So, how do you know Norie, Mr Hunt?

Talia Rutherford, Mr Angus Rutherford's step mother asked Chris this question and Norie glared at her. I was also shocked hearing her stupid question.

Mr Charles Rutherford: Talia, we had talked about it.

Charles Rutherford interrupted his wife but she did not look like the person who would drop a topic like that. She looked like a bully to me.

Talia Rutherford: What? I am just asking in general.

Talia Rutherford replied to Charles Rutherford. She then turned towards us and raised a brow.

Cassie: Mrs Rutherford came to New York City. Actually my father is an FBI agent. He helped her find Mr Rutherford while you were enjoying his absence here, Mrs Rutherford. But the question is, why are you interested in this. Interrogation is not your job, we all know that.

I replied to her in a taunting tone and Norie started laughing hysterically. Seeing her, Mr Rutherford also could not control his laughter, soon he also started laughing. Seeing him laughing carelessly, Charles Rutherford also lost control. Soon everyone started laughing crazily while Talia Rutherford was fuming in anger.

CHAPTER 38

CASSIE'S POV:-

A month had been passed since Norie brought us to her mansion. The Rutherfords were very kind and welcoming. They did not feel strangers at all. It felt like we were part of their family. Chris and I enjoyed our honeymoon. And as Norie had promised, no one tried to get to us. Norie was the reason we were able to enjoy our time together.

Chris and I came back from our morning walk. As we were opening the door of the guest house, Mrs Rutherford came from behind. She asked us if we would like to have anything special for breakfast. She was really a sweetheart. Chris told her that everything would be okay with us. She went away and we stepped into the guest house.

We went towards the bedroom. I went towards the bed and laid down. Chris grabbed his bath gown and stepped into the bathroom. I just did not know why, but I started to miss my dad. Maybe because I had not talked to him after whatever happened. Or maybe because he was not here to hug me like he always did whenever I would feel down.

He said he would be in Scotland soon but it took him time. The FBI officials called him back to Washington and he also had to do some paperwork to get a team so they could come here and take Hendrick with them. In all that fuss, I literally started to miss him a lot.

I was so drowned into my thoughts that I did not realize when Chris was by my side. He pecked my cheek and that pulled me out of my thoughts. I smiled cheekily and wrapped my arms around his neck. I pecked his cheek and he wrapped his arms around me. We laid together on the bed, cuddling with each other.

Chris: What were you thinking?

He whispered into my ear as I snuggled even closer to him. Not the smell of his cologne, not even the fresh citric smell of his soap did anything to his actual scent. And as always, he smelled like home. He was my home.

Cassie: Nothing, I just miss dad. He said he would be here soon but it is still taking time. And until he comes, we can not go back home. I just miss everyone. Mr Hunt, Stella, Iris, my job. I miss everything.

I replied in a sad tone. He chuckled and pecked my lips.

Chris: Your dad will soon be here. I know you miss everything, I do as well. That was why I was keeping you busy with all shopping and traveling and our honeymoon fun. You know, once we will be back home, you will miss this time we have spent here, in Scotland.

He said in a sweet tone that melted my heart. And he was right. It was our very first honeymoon and it was as magical as Chris had promised it to be. I knew we had been through a lot but in the end, as always, Chris and I found each other again.

And after whatever had happened, Chris would never leave my hand. Sometimes, it made me feel like I was a baby and he was taking care of me. He always treated me like a baby. But I never knew he would be extra cautious after our wedding.

Cassie: I love you, Chris. I just don't know what I would have done without you. It also made me realize that I was into you for long. I never understood. But I knew deep inside my heart, you were special for me. I always thought how you knew everything about me without asking. But the only thing I still don't understand, why did you not tell me that all before?

I asked him and he sighed. He kissed the top of my head.

Chris: I always thought that I was not worthy of you. You know, it is not my first marriage. I just could not stop myself after all that. I could not leave you alone that time. Every time I saw tears in your eyes, I felt an ache in my chest. I did not tell you anything because I thought you deserved better. I just did not know that it was our destiny to be together.

He replied and I pecked his bicep. I could not control myself after hearing his words. His kindness, his care, his possessiveness and his protective side. It was actually his love for me. The same love he was hiding behind curtains to keep it all away and hidden from me.

Chris: I love you too. And there is nothing and nobody, who can try to separate us. Only death can do us apart. And that too for a little time. We will meet each other again in heaven.

He said and I nodded my head. He pecked my forehead and helped me up. He then took me to the bathroom and helped me strip my clothes. I then stepped into the shower and he stepped out. I washed my hair and my body. Once done, I stepped out of the bathroom. As always, he helped me with my clothes.

Once we were done, he grabbed my hand and we stepped out of the guest house. He took me to Rutherford's mansion. As we stepped in the dining hall, we were welcomed by the freshly baked goods. To my surprise, chocolate chip cookies were also on the table. My stomach growled loudly and my mouth filled with water as my eyes fell on the delicious cookies.

We both went to the table and took our seats. I grabbed a cookie and took a huge bite. I moaned as the flavor of fresh vanilla with sweet chocolate burst into my mouth. Chris leaned over towards my ear and cleared his throat. I looked at him with a raised brow and annoyed look.

Chris: If you moan again candy, I swear to God I will fuck you right here on this table and in front of everyone.

My eyes widened as he whispered into my ear. I slapped his arm playfully and he chuckled.

Cassie: Where is Norie, Mrs Rutherford?

I asked Mrs Rutherford who was sitting beside me. She shrugged her shoulders and I frowned. I also shrugged and grabbed another cookie. I just could not help myself when it comes to chocolate chip cookies.

Agent Wolf: I thought I heard that you were missing me, sunshine?

I froze as I heard my father's voice. I turned around to confirm if my mind was not playing any games with me. It was really him. My father was finally in Scotland.

CHAPTER 39

CASSIE'S POV:-

David Wolf: I thought I heard that you were missing me, sunshine?

I froze as I heard my father's voice. I turned around to confirm if my mind was not playing any games with me. It was really him. My father was finally in Scotland.

Seeing him, I hopped off of my chair and ran towards him. I squealed in happiness and jumped on my father. As always, I wrapped my arms and legs around him and hugged him tightly. He also wrapped an arm of his around me and with the other, he was rubbing my back.

David Wolf: Only God knows how much I had missed you, sunshine. How are you, my baby?

He asked me in a worry laced tone. I broke the hug and he also put me down.

Cassie: I am fine, dad. I just missed you a lot.

I replied and he pecked my forehead. Chris came close and dad pulled him in a fatherly hug. Norie came in with a wide smile on her face. Her father in law, Mr Charles Rutherford was standing beside her. He pulled her towards the dining table and they invited us to join as well.

After a happy breakfast, dad went away as he had some things to take care of. Dad said they would be taking Hendrick in another flight. He said Chris told him everything I did and how I was ready to fight for myself. Dad said he did not want my courage to go down. That was why Detective Dean came here with dad to take Hendrick Black back to America. While Chris, I and dad would be going in Hunt's private plane.

Once we were done with packing our stuff, Norie came to ask if we needed anything. I just hugged her and thanked her for everything she had done for us. Even after everything she had already done, she still said she would take us to the airport. She said she would not be worried if she would take us by herself.

We bid our goodbyes and stepped into the private plane. Chris busied himself with piles of work he had. Because of the honeymoon and to give all his attention to me, he did not touch his work at all. He took my father's presence as an advantage and to get his work done.

As the plane was up high in the sky, dad pulled me onto his lap and I wrapped my arms around him. I just wanted to sleep onto his lap. I felt safe with him. It's a relationship between a father and a daughter. A father is made to be a shield for his daughter. At least, my father was a shield for me.

David Wolf: You were on your honeymoon and you were missing your father. You are crazy sunshine.

He whispered into my ear and I giggled. I looked up at him and pecked his cheek.

Cassie: A daughter can forget anything but her father. I love Chris because I see your shadow in him. The same shadow that has been protecting me ever since I was born.

I replied and a tear escaped his eye. I wiped his tears and he tightened his hold around me.

David Wolf: I will protect you, .

He replied and rocked me back and forth onto his lap like I was a baby for him. Well, that was true. My dad always thought of me as the same tiny baby I used to be.

Cassie: You pamper me like a baby. What will happen when I will get kids of my own? What will you do to them?

I asked him and he chuckled hearing my question.

David Wolf: I will make them spoiled brats. And will keep them with me, so you will not scold them.

He replied and I giggled shyly. My eyes started feeling heavy as he started rubbing my back as always.

David Wolf: Close your eyes, sunshine. You need rest. I will wake you up before landing.

He whispered into my ear and I nodded my head. Snuggling into his chest, I closed my eyes and drifted off.

I opened my eyes again and looked around. I was not in the plane anymore. I was into our bedroom in Hunt's mansion. I tried to sit up on the bed but my head felt heavy. I laid back down and tried to call Chris. My throat was dry. I was not feeling well. Chris stepped out of the bathroom and sat beside me, on the bed.

Chris: Do you need something? How are you feeling?

He asked me and I just shook my head.

Cassie: Water...

That was all I was able to say. I started coughing hard due to the dry throat. He quickly filled a glass and helped me up. He made me drink water. As the cold content slipped down to my throat, I started to feel a bit better.

Chris: You want more?

He asked me and I nodded my head. He filled the glass with cold water again and helped me drink it. As I emptied the second glass, I was fully awake.

Cassie: Where is dad? Why did you not wake me up?

I asked him with a pout and he chuckled. He set the glass on the bedside table and wrapped his arms around me. He kissed the top of my head lovingly as his arms were tightly wrapped around me.

Chris: Your father and I tried to wake you up but you were in deep sleep. Like you were sleeping after days. I told him not to wake you up. And your father went to get all the paperwork done. We are soon taking a step ahead to punish Hendrick Black for whatever he had done to you.

Chris replied and I just nodded my head. I looked up at him and smiled as I saw a worried look on his face. He was worried that I was forcing myself to do everything to get Hendrick behind the bars. To be honest, I was forcing myself at some point. But I was thinking everything Norie had said to me. She was right. No matter how much I would try to run away, he would always find a way to hurt me. So it was for the best to fight him and put an end to the terror he had built inside my head. I knew I had so many people standing in front of me, to protect me. Then why would I be scared of Hendrick. She was right, he is just a human being, like I am. I stretched my neck a bit and pecked his lips.

Cassie: I am fine, Chris. I can do this. I am not alone. You are with me. Dad is with me. Your whole family is with me. My friends are with me. So why should I be worried. I can do this. I can fight him.

I replied and he nodded his head. He pecked my forehead and stood up. He carried me bridal style and stepped out of the room. He took me downstairs where everyone was waiting for me. The dining table was set and it had three of my favorite dishes. I excitedly jumped into Chris' arms and he chuckled. He set me down and I ran towards Stella. Like always, she pulled me into a motherly hug. I broke the hug and sat down on a chair. Stella sat beside me and fed me by her own hands. I enjoyed my dinner with a loving family I had gotten.

CHAPTER 40

CHRIS' POV:-

I was sitting in the office of my school. I had a lot of unfinished work. So I was speeding up. I also had to take care of my schedules. As one night, I went home late and found Cassie sleeping on the couch. She slept on the couch while waiting for me. And because of that, I earned an amazing scolding session by both of my parents. My mom even told me that if anything like that ever happened again, she would kick me out of the mansion.

We were living in my parents' mansion. My dad said it would be better that Cassie would be around people whom she would feel safe around. I could not just deny because I had something like that in my mind as well. She joined the work again. My father was the one who took the responsibility to take her to the office and bring her back home. He said as part of the family, he has some responsibilities as well. He finally accepted the reality that I would never get myself to take over his business. So he decided to give it to Iris whenever he would retire.

My phone started ringing and I picked up the call without reading the name.

Chris: Christopher Hunt. How can I help you?

I asked.

Detective Dean: Mr Hunt. We have something important to discuss. Where can I meet you?

I heard detective Dean's voice. I looked at the clock and frowned because I had piles of work in front of me and only three hours left.

Chris: You can come to my office. We will not be disturbed at all.

I replied. He said okay and hung up. He did not even tell me what was so important he wanted to talk about. I shrugged my shoulders and called Miss Polly.

Miss Polly: Mr Hunt, you called me?

She asked as she peeked her head through the door. I nodded my head and signalled her to come in. She stepped into my office and stood in front of my desk.

Chris: Detective Dean will be here to talk to me. Show him my office and please make sure, no one would disturb us.

I said and she nodded her head. She excused herself and I again busied myself into my work. About half an hour later, I heard a knock on my office door. I looked up and found detective Dean

standing. I stood up and invited him in. He came in and we shook hands. I sat back on my seat and signalled him to sit down as well.

Chris: What would you like to have, detective?

I asked him and he shook his head.

Detective Dean: Nothing, Mr Hunt. Thank you. I just came to discuss a serious matter with you. I thought it would be better to tell you instead of agent Wolf or agent Lu.

He replied and I frowned seeing his all serious face and a hint of worry in his face.

Chris: Tell me, what is it?

I asked him in a worried tone.

Detective Dean: Have you known of the reason why Mrs Wolf has been visiting jail to meet Mr Black and the kidnappers who had kidnapped Mrs Hunt?

He asked me and I frowned even more.

Chris: Mrs Wolf? You must have gotten the wrong news. She did not even come to our wedding. She did not come when her daughter was in the coma. Why would she be here now?

I asked and he wrapped his arms above his chest.

Detective Dean: How about you ask agent Wolf? He would know if his wife is in Brooklyn.

He asked me and I sighed. I nodded my head and dialled agent Wolf. He picked up on the third bell. I put the phone on speaker so detective Dean would be able to hear our conversation as well.

Chris: Hi, agent Wolf. I wanted to ask if your wife told you about her visit to Brooklyn. Did she tell you anything?

I asked him and he chuckled loudly hearing my question.

David Wolf: Christy can do anything but to visit Brooklyn to meet Cassie. Trust me. She will never come here.

He replied in a humorous tone. I looked at detective Dean with an annoyed look on my face and he shook his head.

Chris: Okay, thanks. That was all I needed to know. I thought I saw her.

I replied and hung up. I looked at Detective Dean who was searching something on his phone.

Detective Dean: But I have proof that she is in Brooklyn. It's weird that Agent Wolf doesn't know that his wife is in New York.

Detective Dean said and kept searching for something inside his s phone. I frowned because I did not understand what he was talking about.

Chris: What kind of proof are you talking about? Are you sure it was Mrs Wolf?

I asked detective Dean in a serious tone.

Detective Dean: I have confirmed it three times with my colleagues. I have CCTV footage and pictures of agent Wolf's wife visiting the jail cell. She visited every time to meet Mr Black and all the kidnappers. This is not just a coincidence. If it's this bad that she did not visit her daughter while she was fighting for her life and also on her big day, then why is she here now? And for what reason she is visiting only jail and not even agent Wolf knows why she is here, or if she is here?

Detective Dean replied and handed me his phone. I looked at the screen and it was true. It was Cassie's mother. I had seen her in photos only. She had never visited Cassie in all these years she had spent into Brooklyn.

Chris: It would be better if we keep this between us. I will try to find if Cassie knows anything. While you find everything you can about her and her visits to the jail. Let's keep it a secret until we know everything.

I replied while giving him his phone back. He nodded his head.

Detective Dean: I will try to find everything about her. I have to check her background as well. I need to be sure of everything. If you allow me, I will check her relationship with your wife, as well.

He asked me and I nodded my head.

Chris: Anything you need. I just want this to work out in the end. Cassie is trying hard to fight. I want her to win this fight.

I replied and he nodded his head. We shook our hands and he stepped out of my office, leaving me alone with everything he had told me.

CHAPTER 41

CASSIE'S POV:-

I was sitting in the cafeteria of the office. I was not allowed to leave the office without Mr Hunt. He strictly ordered that ever if I had to go shopping with Iris, we would have to go with either Mr Hunt, Chris, Scott or my dad. They were all extra cautious about me and my safety. I did not mind at all. Even though Iris tried to talk me through to get me to go shopping alone, I declined. Because I knew it was better to sit home than asking for trouble with Mr Hunt.

Scott came in and took his seat. I called the waiter and ordered lunch for both of us. I had informed Mr Hunt that I had some things to discuss with Scott about the case. He allowed me to go to the office cafeteria. And Iris promised me that she would take care of my work until I would come back. To be honest, they were all a great support for me to fight that battle. It was a great relief knowing that I was not alone into this fight.

Scott: So tell me, Mrs Hunt. What is bothering you?

Scott asked me and chuckled. I pulled my phone out of my purse and unlocked the screen. I showed him the reason I called him to meet me.

Cassie: I have been receiving all these threatening messages from an unknown number. It has been a week since we came back home. Everything was fine by now. But yesterday, I received the first text. Since then I have counted, I have received fifty six threatening messages in twenty four hours. I thought it would be better to tell someone other than my dad or Chris. I really want all this to be over so I can live my life peacefully with my family.

I told him everything while he read each and every text that was inside my phone. His facial expressions changed from humorous to worried as he was done by the last text.

Scott: You did right to tell me everything. I will take care of it. Keep your phone but don't open these texts. I will find out who is behind this and why. You need to be ready for the session tomorrow. You have started a war, Cassie. The accused ones throw stones on the innocent ones to scare them away. But you don't have to be worried about it at all. We all are standing with you.

He said and handed my phone back to me. I nodded my head and we enjoyed our lunch together. He told me everything I should keep in mind while the session would be going on. He also told me that all proofs are straight against Hendrick Black and the kidnappers also testified. That means happens but in the end, I would win this fight. It was a relief to know that I would soon be free from the cage Hendrick had caged me in.

I hopped into the car, ready to go back home. I was excited to see Chris. It was a long day and I went through it as well. Mr Hunt also stepped into the car and asked the driver to take us home. He wrapped his arm around me as I started feeling sleepy.

Mr Hunt: Are you okay, dear?

He asked me and I nodded my head with a cheeky smile.

Cassie: I am fine. I'm just tired.

I replied and he hummed. I closed my eyes and the rest of the ride went silent. Or maybe because I was into my dreamland. Mr Hunt woke me up as we reached home. He helped me out and took me into the mansion. As always, Stella had cookies and chocolate milk ready for me. I squealed in excitement and went to her. I was about to grab a cookie when she cleared her throat. I looked at her and she angrily signalled me to wash my hands. I stomped my foot on the floor and went to the kitchen to wash my hands.

I went back to the living room where Chris was sitting on one of the couches. I went to him and sat beside him. He quickly wrapped his arms around me and pulled me in a bone cracking hug.

Cassie: Chris, I can't breathe...

I said while gasping for air. He chuckled and let me go. His one arm was still wrapped around my shoulders and with the other one, he fed me the cookies Stella had made for me.

As we stepped into the bedroom, Chris pinned me with the wall as he locked the door. He grabbed my wrist and pulled me towards the bed. He sat on the bed and I sat on his lap. He got rid of his tux jacket and I loosened up his tie.

He grabbed me by my hips and threw me on the bed. He hovered upon me and leaned in. He teased me with his hot breaths. He was rubbing his lips over mine. I cupped the back of his head with my hands and slammed my lips on his.

He smirked and pushed his tongue inside my mouth. I enjoyed the way his tongue caressed my tongue. His mouth tasted like mint ice cream. I broke the kiss and raised a brow at him. He rolled his eyes and laid down beside me.

Cassie: You had ice cream and that too without me?

I asked him as he sneaked an arm around my waist. He pulled me on top of him.

Chris: Yeah! I had ice cream. Why should I keep you in mind every time I would have ice cream?

He asked me and I huffed in anger. He pulled me even closer and pecked my cheek.

Chris: Your ice cream is in the fridge. You can have it whenever you want. But right now, I want to have my ice cream.

He replied and licked my cheek. I bit my lower lip and he sat up on the bed. He peeled his clothes off of his body and started peppering kisses all over my body.

Cassie: I want you, Chris.

I moaned as he bit my neck.

Chris: I am all your, my lovely wife.

He replied in a seductive tone and the next thing I knew, was another dress of mine being torn off of my body. He pinned my wrists above my head and kissed me hard.

CHAPTER 42

HENDRICK BLACK'S POV:-

I was sitting on the only bed that was in the jail cell they kept me in. It was the first day of the case. I already knew that Jo and his gang had already testified that I was the one who had paid them to kidnap Cassandra. And I raped Cassandra as well. It was true. I had paid Jo millions to kidnap her. And I had raped her. I was the cold hearted man everyone known as the monster. Monster, that was what she used to call me. Only if she would understand how I felt about her. But who could have told her. She loved that son of a bitch Hunt.

I saw my parents coming towards the cell. I stood up and waited for them. I knew why they were visiting me. They were worried if something happened to me, they did not have anyone else to take care of the business they cared about most. At least my father was here for that specific reason. As per my brother, he never wanted to be part of that business. He made his own life in London. For him, it was a prison. He thought everything bad in our lives was somehow connected to that business.

Mr Black: Son, you don't have to worry about anything. We took care of everything. Now, just do exactly as I will tell you and you will be a free man.

He said and I looked at my mom who was standing behind him with her mouth sealed. Something inside me screamed that I would not like the plan my father had in his mind. But of course, I had to know everything. So I just raised my brow at my father and he sighed.

Mr Black: It is for your own good. You have to do exactly as I am telling you to do. Their evidence against you is solid enough to end this case in one day. Please son, you have to do that for your mother at least if not for me.

He replied and pleaded to me to do everything he would ask me. I signed again and signalled him to speak up. A wide smile was on his face as he got the signal.

Mr Black: As our lawyer has said, we will not do anything in the beginning. But in the end, the judge will ask you if you have anything in your defense. It is part of law. They will ask you this question. You have to tell them that she was in a physical relationship with you. To hide it from the world, she asked you to play this kidnapping drama.

He started and my jaw actually dropped on the floor. I regained my composure and gritted my teeth at him.

Hendrick Black: What the fuck are you talking about? Do you think it is easy to prove that innocent woman as a slut? How dare you to come up with such a sinful idea. What made you think that I would do something like that?

I roared at him and my father bit his tongue. He stepped back and signalled my mother to talk to me. He knew how much I hated him for whatever he had done to my mother. That was why he knew that only my mother could convince me to do whatever he was asking me to do.

Mrs Black: Hendrick, please son. Have mercy on me. Look at me. Kendrick denied to even come back even after he was kicked out of that house. Please, just listen to your father and do exactly as he will guide you.

My mother pleaded to me with teary eyes and I gritted my teeth. I nodded my head for her and she wiped her tears. I signalled my father to carry on while I held my mother's hands to calm her down.

Mr Black: Quinn and a few people working for us would testify that they have seen her with you. It would be just for once. Once you are free, you can live your life as you want. Then do whatever you want but please, you have to tell the judge that everything happened with her free will. That she asked you to have sex with her but she did not want her father to know what kind of slut she is.

He replied and I let go of my mother's hands. I had to ball my fists to control my anger. My mother cupped my face through the bars and I looked at her. She had tears in her eyes. But she wiped my tears. I did not know but I had tears in my eyes. For what reason, I did not know.

Mrs Black: You will do that for me, right? You will tell the judge that she is guilty. Promise me, you will do that, my son. You are the only reason I am alive. Don't take that away from me. Promise me.

She pleaded to me and started sobbing hard. My father wrapped his arms around her shoulders and rubbed her arms to calm her down. But she did not. I was not able to say anything. My words vanished and my tongue died in my mouth when she asked me to do something I could not do at all. I shut my eyes tightly and nodded my head slowly. I just hit my forehead with the bars a few times due to my helplessness. Because I knew after that Cassandra would not even hate me.

Hendrick Black: Tell me one thing, mother. What if she was your daughter and I would be the son of that agent? Tell me how would you feel? Tell me if you would have a daughter and someone would have done something like that to your daughter. Would you still ask me to defame Cassandra as a slut or would you kill me with your own hands? Tell me, I want to know.

I asked her in the exact same pleading tone she was using with me. She looked at me with her eyes filled with guilty tears. She opened her mouth a few times but then shut it. As I knew she was speechless with the questions I had asked her.

Mr Black: I would say that I am thankful that you are our son and we don't have any daughter.

My father replied bitterly and I gritted my teeth hearing his answer. I glared at him. He was alive because of the bars of the cell between us. Otherwise I would have killed my good for nothing father that very day. He forced my mother away while she did not dare to look into my eyes again. She was guilty.

Hendrick Black: That is why I did not ask you that question, Mr Black. You are a cold hearted man. Who cares about nothing but his money, his business and his reputation.

I yelled angrily as they went away. I kicked the bars hard then went back to my bed. I sat on the bed with my head in my hands.

CHAPTER 43

HENDRICK BLACK'S POV:-

Mr Black: I would say that I am thankful that you are our son and we don't have any daughter.

My father replied bitterly and I gritted my teeth hearing his answer. I glared at him. He was alive because of the bars of the cell between us. Otherwise I would have killed my good for nothing father that very day. He forced my mother away while she did not dare to look into my eyes again. She was guilty.

Hendrick Black: That is why I did not ask you that question, Mr Black. You are a cold hearted man. Who cares about nothing but his money, his business and his reputation.

I yelled angrily as they went away. I kicked the bars hard then went back to my bed. I sat on the bed with my head in my hands. I wanted to kill that heartless man. I knew he was forcing my mother to say all that to me. Because when she learned that I forced myself on a woman, since that day everything changed between us. My mother was not like she used to be.

Kendrick Black: This is regression you are feeling, my brother.

I heard my brother's voice and looked up. I rolled my eyes and stood up with a smirk on my face. I just could not show him what I was going through. To be honest, I did not know what was going on with me. It was like I was not myself anymore.

Hendrick Black: So you came. Here to enjoy my destruction. Like I destroyed everything in your life? It is really not a pleasure seeing you here today.

I asked him bitterly and he shook his head. He came closer and held the bars. He looked like he had not slept in days. I gave him a confused look when he patted my arm through the bars.

Kendrick Black: Brother, I am not here to see your destruction. I am here for you. To support you to do what's right. You and I both know what father is asking you to do, it will not even lead you near the right path. Brother, you know better. You hate the old man for a reason. That was the reason why I decided to stay in London. You and I both know he is the reason behind everything that has happened in our lives.

He said and I gritted my teeth. He was behaving like he cared. He only cared for himself. He never cared for anyone. He decided to run away while I was the one who was stuck here in New York with my shitty family and my good for nothing father. My addict father who only had three things in his life, drugs, gambling and women. Everyday I saw him breaking my mother's heart.

Hendrick Black: You are talking like you care so much about us, brother. Remember, you were the one who decided to run away. You left me here alone. Now you have come back to teach me a lesson about the right path you think I should follow. Who asked you to even show your face here. Nobody needs you here, brother. Go back to London.

I replied bitterly and went back to the bed. I sat down and gritted my teeth. He dared to show up when I did not need him at all. And he thought he would be forgiven for everything he had done. Well, it was not that easy. I had decided not to forgive him ever.

Kendrick Black: I am neither here to see your destruction, nor to ask for forgiveness. I am here so I could show you the right path. You know better. Brother, you are not bad. Don't be like our father. You hated him most when we found out about him cheating on our mother. We both know why mother is not talking to you anymore. Brother, you still have time. He never cared about us. He was here to save his reputation, not his son. Don't let him win. Don't be like him.

He said and I shook my head. I looked at the ceiling and tried to control my tears hard. But my tears were more stubborn than me. They flowed like a rain cloud.

Hendrick Black: It's too late, brother. Who cares if I did not do whatever father was asking me to do. I am like him. I have become him. I have hated him most and look at me. I became an ass hole like him.

I replied and stood up. I went to him and he wiped my tears.

Kendrick Black: These tears are telling me otherwise. Brother, you still have hope. You can still do good. I know you hate yourself. But don't do what father is asking you to do. If you do that, you will kill that last hope as well. There is still a thin line between my brother and the monster you have hated for so many years.

He replied and I shook my head.

Hendrick Black: Why are you here, Kenny? I destroyed your life. Because of me, you and Ella are separated. I know how many lives I have destroyed. You are on top. Why are you here? What do you want?

I asked him angrily. I wanted to know the reason why he was beside me when I needed him. It was true. I needed him to be by my side. He was the only friend I ever had. But he went away for Ella. He stayed in London for the woman he was in love with. I just wanted to know why.

Kendrick Black: Is it not obvious my brother, Henry? I am your brother. And brothers support each other. Please, Henry. Don't do it. Don't defame her more. Don't destroy her more than you have already done. Let her live happily. Trust me, you will be happy seeing her happy in her life. If

you love her crazily as you have said that you were ready to kill her and then kill yourself so you can unit with her. Brother, try to let her be free.

He said and I nodded my head. He held his fist in front of me and I smiled. I bumped my fist with his.

Kendrick Black: I still believe in you. You are not like our father. You are better than him. Show him and the whole world. Trust me, you will find your heaven if you did not do that.

He said and I nodded my head.

Hendrick Black: I promise I will not. I will not be like our father. I will accept everything before they will start the process.

I replied and he patted my arm. If I would be able to hug him, I would have. I felt an urge to hug my brother. But those damn bars did not let us.

CHAPTER 44

CASSIE'S POV:-

I was sitting on a bench in the courtroom. I was very nervous. My palms were sweaty due to the nervousness. Chris went away to talk to detective Dean in private. My father was sitting beside me. Hendrick's parents entered the courtroom and his father smirked while looking at my face. It made me think if Hendrick was up to something new. My phone beeped with a text message. I pulled my phone out of my clutch and checked the message.

Norie: I am not there with you. But don't think of yourself alone. I am with you. Don't give up, Cassandra. You can do it. You can fight him. Don't forget, you are on the right path. You are just trying to save whatever you have worked hard to build again. Don't let him destroy you again. Instead, destroy him this time. I will eagerly be waiting for your reply. And I know it will be good news. Good luck and stay strong.

I smiled reading her text. She was really a nice person. And again her words made me feel stronger. I put my phone back into my clutch and my father held my hand. I looked at him and gave him a smile. He pecked the back of my hand.

David Wolf: Stay strong, sunshine. You can do it. I am with you. I will not let anyone hurt you.

He said and I nodded my head.

Christy: Dav, she is not a baby who needs to be cooed. Let her be. She will be fine.

I heard my mother's voice and I turned around. I stood up and hugged her tightly. She lightly patted my head a few times then broke the hug.

David Wolf: I wonder what brought you here, Christy? As I can remember, you said you don't have time to waste for Cassie's mellow drama.

My father taunted my mom and I shook my head. It was like they could not talk without fighting each other. But to my surprise, mom did not say anything to dad. She just rolled her eyes then sat beside my dad. Mr Hunt, Iris and Stella came. Stella gritted her teeth as she saw Black family sitting like Hendrick was an innocent man. She came to me and pecked my forehead. She sat beside me and grabbed my hand.

Stella: Just a few more days. You can do this.

She said and I pecked the back of her hand. She was really an ideal mother. Chris came back with anger evident on his face. He sat beside me and wrapped his arms around me. Like he was protecting me from someone who wanted to harm me.

The judge entered the courtroom and we all stood up. He sat down and signalled us to sit down as well. He signalled the police to bring Hendrick Black. My heart started drumming inside my rib cage. I started taking deep breaths to calm my nerves. I wanted it to be finished so I could live my life peacefully. Stella squeezed my hand a bit to assure me that I was not alone.

They brought Hendrick into the courtroom. Detective Dean took him straight to the witness box. As he stepped into the witness box, he looked at me for a good minute. It was like I could see guilt and regression in his eyes. I would have believed what I saw in his eyes if it was not Hendrick Black. He was a monster and I knew he still was not feeling any regressions for what he did to me.

Honorable Judge: Everyone is here. Let's start the process. We have Mrs Cassandra Hunt who has accused Mr Hendrick Black for kidnapping her and abusing her sexually. Let's begin with our first witness.

The judge announced and I hugged Chris' arm tightly. He pecked my forehead but did not push me away. He knew I needed him.

Hendrick Black: Before you start, can I say something? I mean, you will ask me if I have anything to say, in the end. Why not in the beginning?

Hendrick Black asked the honorable Judge and I shivered. I just could not understand what he was up to. The honorable Judge signalled him to say whatever he had to say and I held my breath. I knew he would defame me so he could torture me even more. He turned to look at me but his smile was not on his face anymore.

Hendrick Black: I still don't understand why in hell this court asked to proceed if I had committed that sin. You all have men who have testified. I, Hendrick Black. Yes, I am the one who paid Jo and his gang to abduct Cassandra. And I was the one who abused her sexually. I tortured her for months. Whatever Jo and his gang have said, it's all true. Now let's end it right here. I am a criminal. And I am telling you that all those proofs against me are real.

My eyes almost popped out of its sockets when I heard Hendrick Black telling the truth. I thought he would defame me saying that I was a slut or something. But instead, he just accepted everything he had done. I looked around and found everyone as shocked as I was. His father stood up and tried to say something but Hendrick held his hand high to shush his father.

Hendrick Black: I know what you want to say, father. But I can't do that. I can't defame her. I am not like you. Or at least I am trying not to be like you.

He said and his father gritted his teeth. He sat back down on his bench and Hendrick turned to look at the Judge.

Hendrick Black: I am telling the truth. And I do not have any hidden agenda. I have committed a sin and I have to be punished. I am not saying anything under any kind of pressure. And whatever my lawyer has given you, it's all a lie. People who testified in my favor, they were paid by my father. I also accept the fact that I tried to kill her twice. So I am accused for attempt to murder as well.

He replied and the Judge looked at me.

Honorable Judge: Mrs Hunt, do you agree with everything Mr Black just said?

He asked me and I nodded my head.

Cassie: Yes, he is telling the truth.

I replied and he hummed. He then started writing something on the file of the case. He then looked up and wrapped his arms on the table.

Honorable Judge: According to Mr Black's statement and Mrs Hunt's accusations, Mr Hendrick Black is found guilty. The witnesses have testified in front of me and the honorable court. The abductors and the police. He abducted, tortured, sexually abused and attempted to kill Mrs Cassandra Hunt. And for all his crimes and according to the laws of our country, Mr Hendrick Black will spend the rest of his life in jail. Mrs Cassandra Hunt, you can now live your life in peace as Mr Black will no longer be around to hurt you anymore or your family.

The Judge ordered and I thanked God. Finally, everything was fine. I felt like I was a bird who had finally escaped the cage. The police cuffed Hendrick Black and was taking him away when he stopped in his tracks in front of me.

CHAPTER 45

CHRIS' POV:-

The honorable Judge stood up after signing the decision he had written. He left and detective Dean nodded his head at me. I did the same and stood up. I wrapped my arm around Cassie's waist. Detective Dean went to Hendrick while a police officer cuffed him. They walked towards us and Hendrick stopped in front of Cassie.

Agent Wolf hopped up and quickly came towards us. While Cassie stood bravely. But my mind was elsewhere. My eyes were glued to Mrs Wolf who looked unusually pale as Hendrick stopped in front of Cassie. She stood between agent Wolf and Hendrick. I was not the only one who was observing Mrs Wolf. It was because of the information detective Dean had found.

Before the court proceeded, Detective Dean called me and told me something about Mrs Wolf. According to him, Mrs Wolf was meeting with Hendrick and the gang who kidnapped Cassie. Detective Dean asked around and found out that she had been collecting information. She asked them only about the questions and answers between the police and the kidnappers. But with Hendrick, she had been begging him for something. I found it weird because I did not understand why a mother would beg the torturer of her daughter.

Hendrick did not say a single word. He just stared at Cassie. To my surprise, I saw guilt in his eyes. As if he was asking for forgiveness but he did not have words to express his initial feelings. His eyes diverted towards Mrs Wolf for a few minutes. The guilt I saw in his eyes was long gone. Instead I saw pure hatred and anger in his eyes for Mrs Wolf. Something similar as we had for Hendrick.

I signalled detective Dean and he pushed Hendrick a bit. He started walking again but Mrs Wolf did not move from her place. Hendrick asked detective Dean to let him say goodbye to his mother. Detective Dean nodded and they stopped in front of Mrs Black. While Mr Black was fuming in anger, Mrs Black was sobbing quietly. She went to Hendrick and cupped his face.

Hendrick: I am sorry, mother. I could not do it. I had to break my promise. I could not do more damage. I can not be like the very person I hate most in my life. I can not be like my father. I hope one day you will understand why I did that. I just could not do any more damage than I have already done.

He apologized to his mother loud enough for us to hear as well. His mother shook her head and hugged him tightly.

Mrs Black: Just for you to know, I am proud of you, son. I knew you would do what is right. I love you.

She replied while sobbing hard in her son's arms. I turned to look at Mrs Wolf who had a mischievous smirk on her face. All this time she was pale like she had seen a ghost but then she was smiling like she had won a game. I was trying hard to read her face but it was my first time with a woman like her. She was smart and cunning.

Suddenly, she masked her face with dramatic anger and went to the Black family. She grabbed Hendrick's arm and pulled him away from his mother. She did not say anything to Hendrick but turned towards Mrs Black.

Mrs Wolf: Proud of him. How can you be proud of him? You should be ashamed of yourself for giving birth to a man like Hendrick. What do you both think? Just because he has accepted everything he has done to Cassandra, does not mean he should be forgiven for the sins he has committed. He destroyed her life. He had tortured her. He had abused her sexually. How can you be proud of him?

Mrs Wolf asked Mrs Black in an angry tone. Mrs Black gritted her teeth and pushed her son behind her. Keeping her head high, she stood in front of Mrs Wolf.

Mrs Black: Yes, I am proud of my son. He has enough guts to own his sins. He did not hide behind his money. He made a mistake. And nobody asked you to forgive him. But as his mother, I know he has taken his first step towards the right path. And I believe in him that soon he will find the right path. I know, my son is a good man.

Mrs Black said proudly and Mrs Wolf gritted her teeth. Mr Wolf went to her and rubbed her arms to calm her down. But she pushed him and turned back to Mrs Black.

Mrs Wolf: You are the one to be blamed. Your son did what you have taught him. You should be the one to be punished, not him only but you as well. You did this all to my daughter.

Mrs Wolf started yelling at Mrs Black crazily. We all went to her as Mr Wolf was trying to calm her down.

Hendrick: Don't you dare cross that line, Mrs Wolf. You and I both know how much you care for your daughter. It's better to keep the cat in the bag. One more word out of your mouth with the intention to insult my mother and you will regret your actions.

Hendrick threatened her and she slapped him hard on his cheek. He fell on the bench and Mrs Wolf pointed her finger at Mrs Black. She grabbed her hair and pulled her head aggressively.

Mrs Wolf: You are proud of him. He is a rapist. What would make you hate him? You are the exact same monster as he is. You gave birth to a monster. You think I would let it go that easily? Never. You have to pay for the sins your son has committed. You bitch, I will kill you.

She said and grabbed her throat. Mr Wolf grabbed her hand and tried to free Mrs Black who was choking. Her eyes were red and she was coughing hard.

Hendrick Black: That's enough. Leave her alone.

Hendrick roared at Mrs Wolf but she smirked and kept squeezing Mrs Black's throat.

Hendrick: You asked for it.

He said and stood up again. Seeing his furious eyes, Mrs Wolf let go of Mrs Black's throat. She shivered as Hendrick glared at her.

CHAPTER 46

HENDRICK BLACK'S POV:-

Hendrick: You asked for it.

I said as I stood up again. As she saw me fuming in anger, Mrs Wolf let go of my mother's throat. She shivered as I glared at her angrily. I could bear anything upon myself. But never upon my mother. She was an innocent woman. Who had nothing to do with my sins and my crimes. Mrs Wolf thought that I was keeping my mouth shut because I was worried about my reputation. I never cared about my reputation. Otherwise I would never have forced myself upon a woman in the first place. As per my mother, she was innocent and Mrs Wolf had awakened the monster inside me.

Hendrick: You asked for it. It was not me who paid Jo and his gang. Agent Wolf, your wife was the one who paid them to kill Cassandra. She was the one who paid them. I know what I did was horrible. But at least my mother is not a monster like you. She did not try to kill me. Or paid a gang to abduct Cassandra and kill her. Why don't you tell that to your husband? I abused her but you were the one who threw her in that hell hole.

I roared at Mrs Wolf and she went pale again. She turned to look at her husband who was as surprised as Cassandra was. She looked at me and gritted her teeth.

Agent Wolf: What is he talking about, Christy? What does he mean?

Agent Wolf asked in a confused tone. Mrs Wolf went to her husband and tried to grab his hands but he did not even let her touch him.

Cassandra: Mom, tell me he is lying? You can not do that? You are my mother. I know, I am not your favorite child but mom, you can not do this.

Cassandra asked her mother in a shocked tone. But Mrs Wolf did not even look at her. She cupped the face of her husband and made him look at her face. Agent Wolf was staring at my face ever since I had told everyone about the little dark secret of his wife.

Katy: Don't be so sure, Cassie. Like the witch she is, she can do anything.

Cassandra's sister, Katy said as she entered the courtroom. Everyone turned around and stared at her.

Agent Wolf: Katy, what are you doing here, my little bunny?

Agent Wolf asked his other daughter. Katy went to Cassandra and hugged her tightly. She then broke the hug after a minute and held Cassandra's hands.

Katy: If it wasn't for Jack's mom, I would have been with you at your wedding. It took me long to realize that I would be alone like our mother if I would try to be like her. That was why, when I was given an opportunity, I availed it.

She said and Cassandra shook her head. They shared another hug but this time it was with their father. Katy then turned towards her father with her eyes red in anger.

Katy: When I learned the truth, I came here straight to inform you all as well. Dad, mom is the one behind it all. Jack and I have been after this for a very long time. We learned that truth when we went back to Washington DC after Cassie's abduction. Jack saw her meeting some strangers. At first, I thought it would be her clients but then I heard a man talking to her that the gang was paid twice the amount of money she had paid to kill Cassandra. Since then, I and Jack were searching for the truth. Whatever Hendrick Black is saying, it is the truth.

She said and agent Wolf turned to look at her wife. He gritted his teeth and I smirked as her real face was unmasked in front of the world. Mr Wolf went to his wife and glared at her.

Agent Wolf: Do you have anything to say, Christy?

He asked her angrily and she shivered with fear evident in her eyes.

Christy: It's a lie. They all are lying. Dav, honey. You know I would never do that.

She said while trying to hug her husband. She wrapped her arms around her husband but he did not move an inch. Cassandra went to her.

Detective Dean: Then why were you visiting the kidnappers and why even bother to meet and beg the very person who had abused your daughter, Mrs Wolf?

Detective Dean asked and she broke the hug. She was staring at detective Dean with her eyes wide open in shock.

Christopher: Yes, we know everything. And guess what, we have evidence and eye witnesses.

Christopher said in a taunting tone.

Agent Lu: Not just that. Turns out, the threatening messages Cassie showed me, they were not sent by Hendrick Black or his men. It was a woman who bought the phone and the sim. According to the description, the woman was in her mid fifties, blonde hair, smart, tall, stunning and very fashionable. We took our sketch artist and your face popped up on the paper we gave him. I would not call it a coincidence.

Agent Lu said as he showed the sketch to agent Wolf. Agent Wolf grabbed the paper and stared at it with his eyes filled with pure rage. He pushed his wife away and I saw something in her hand.

Hendrick: Cassandra, look out!!!

I yelled loudly. But before anyone could understand what was happening, Mrs Wolf pointed the gun of her husband on Cassandra's head.

Christy: Another step towards me or if anyone tried to play smart with me, I will blow her head off. Hands in the air everyone.

She said and everyone did as she had told. Cassandra was crying while she dragged her out of the courtroom. Even the police were not able to do anything. And about the others, they were still in shock.

Hendrick: Why is anyone not doing anything? She will kill her.

I yelled loudly and that was when everyone turned to look at me.

Chapter 47

CHRIS' POV:-

Christy: Another step towards me or if anyone tried to play smart with me, I will blow her head off. Hands in the air everyone.

She said and everyone did as she had told. Cassie was crying and looking at me with sad eyes. It looked like everything was finished. I did not think a mother could become a monster. Cassie's mother dragged her out of the courtroom. Even the police were not able to do anything. I was as shocked as everyone else was. It was a pure nightmare.

Hendrick: Why is anyone not doing anything? She will kill her.

Hendrick yelled loudly and that was when everyone turned to look at him. It was like we all were awakened by him.

Agent Wolf: We need to stop her.

Her father said and Scott pulled his phone out of his pocket. My mother started crying and Iris went to her. She signalled me to go and I nodded my head. Scott, I and agent Wolf ran towards the exit. While detective Dean brought Hendrick Black out. Hendrick was screaming to let him go but detective Dean gave him to the police and came to us.

Scott: She took your car, agent Wolf. It's impossible to track your car this easily. She is smart. Damnit, we should have been more careful since almost all of us knew what could have happened there.

Scott said and I kicked the stone that was on the ground. Agent Wolf sat on the ground with his head in his hands.

Agent Wolf: What about the program she had created to track people? It helped me find Mr Rutherford, we can find my car as well.

He asked and I shook my head.

Chris: The program could be dangerous in wrong hands that was why my father asked her to keep the security codes in her hands. Without Cassie around, the program is nothing. We need her codes to make it work. You were able to find Mr Rutherford because she set it up for you.

I replied in a disappointed tone.

Hendrick: I know where she is taking her. I can help you all find Cassandra.

Hendrick Black yelled from inside the car he was in. Hearing him, agent Wolf went to the car and the officer stopped the car. We all followed behind as we saw agent Wolf pulling Hendrick out of the car.

Agent Wolf: After destroying my daughter's life, after becoming her worst nightmare, why would you help her or us? Why even bother?

He asked Hendrick in an angry tone. Hendrick chuckled bitterly and looked at me.

Hendrick: What I did, it was unforgivable. And I can not even think to ask for forgiveness. But if I helped you find her, I would be able to sleep peacefully for at least tonight. At least I could do something good. As someone said, I can be better, I can do better. Please let me help. Your wife will kill her if you don't make a decision fast.

He begged agent Wolf and agent Wolf looked at me.

Scott: Like we really have a choice. Somehow, he knows what is she up to? It's our only chance. We have to do it.

Scott yelled at us and we both nodded our heads. Detective Dean uncuffed Hendrick and we all ran towards Scott's car. As we all knew, his car was faster than any other car.

Detective Dean: Agent Wolf, I want you to turn on the location of your phone and tag me so I can find you all. I better get more people so we can save her.

Detective Dean said and agent Wolf nodded his head. We all hopped into the car and Scott turned on the engine. We all buckled up and Scott drove off.

Chris: But I did not get it. Why? Why would she hurt her own daughter? First she paid a gang to abduct her then kill her. Then she tried to contact Hendrick. Why all that?

I asked in a frustrated tone while Hendrick was directing Scott.

Hendrick: not just that. Sam was not the only one who knew where she was? She did that all on purpose. For me, it was an opportunity. But why would a month become a monster?

Hendrick said then he as well asked the same question. We all looked at agent Wolf who had his eyes narrowed due to the guilt he was feeling.

Agent Wolf: That is because she is not her biological mother. Cassie is an adopted child. I never told that to Cassie. But Christy knew that of course. I knew she never liked Cassie at all. But never in my life I thought she would try to kill Cassie.

He replied and Scott stopped the car abruptly.

Chris: What? Why did you not tell that to any of us?

I yelled at him and Scott shook his head. Scott started driving again and we all waited for agent Wolf to reply.

Agent Wolf: I never wanted to lose her. That was why I kept it a secret. She was not my own blood but I love her more than I love my own daughter. She was the last memento of the love of my life. How could I leave Cassie?

He said and I sighed. I patted his back and he looked at me.

Agent Wolf: Cassandra's mother, Sandra was the love of my life. We lived in the same neighborhood. We loved each other. But her grandmother set her up with an addict man. He was a criminal. Sandra's parents were in Canada and they wanted Sandra to be with me. Everything was set until his grandmother fucked up our lives. Before her parents could have come to stop everything, she was not just married forcefully but was abused sexually as well. I was in Los Angeles at that time for a case. Sandra was alone here. Until we all learned what her grandmother did, it was too late.

He replied and I started to feel the pain he went through.

Chris: Why did she do that?

I asked him and a year escaped his eye.

Agent Wolf: We were engaged. Her father was very happy to see us both together. And so were my parents. But her grandmother, she was a psychotic bitch. She forcefully set her up with that criminal. Her grandmother was gambling addict. She was under the debt of that criminal named Kara. To pay her debts without telling her son, she sold his daughter to a monster. When no one picked up my phone, I asked my friend to visit Sandra. One of the neighbors told him that one night, she went out with Sandra. But she came back alone. I called her parents and we all went to find out what happened. But I was late by then.

He said as tears flowed freely from his eyes. I pulled my handkerchief out of my pocket and gave it to him. Agent Wolf wiped his tears with the handkerchief.

Chris: Why were you late?

I asked and he chuckled darkly.

Agent Wolf: As we learned the truth, Sandra's father called the police and they arrested his mother. It took us almost three years to find her. By the time I reached her, she was six months pregnant with Cassie. She had bruises and cuts all over her body. She was pale and weak. I took her to the hospital and Kara was arrested as well for abusing a woman and trading her for money. Turned out, he saw her when she went on a camping trip with her friends. He offered to have sex with her

but she declined and asked called the police when he harassed her. She begged me to take care of her child if anything happened to her. I tried to deny the fact but I also knew she would not survive. In those four years, my mom set me up with Christy as we knew that Sandra was married. I'm fact, Cassie and Katy were born with the difference of six hours. That is why they only know that they are twins.

He said and I glared at Hendrick who did exactly the same with Cassie.

Agent Wolf: After a month in ICU, she was taken to the operation theater in emergency. Doctor came out with a beautiful baby girl in her arms. It was Cassie. But then they told me that Sandra could not survive. She died and I took Cassie in. My mother set me up with Christy because she thought I was wasting my life with someone else's baby. But I never thought Christy could become a monster.

He replied while crying crazily.

Hendrick: We are almost there.

Hendrick said as I tried my best to calm agent Wolf.

CHAPTER 48

CASSIE'S POV:-

My mother stopped the car in front of the same building I had spent a year in. It was the worst nightmare of my life. She hopped out of the car and grabbed my hair. She pulled my hair and I stepped out of the car. Dragging me by my hair, she took me into the same bedroom where Hendrick had abused me for months.

Cassie: Stop it. Why are you doing this? I did not do anything. Why do you hate me this much? You are my mother. You have already done enough to destroy my life. What else do you want?

I yelled at her as she pushed me on a chair. Her gun was still pointed at my head, that was why I did not move. She pulled the police mark band and tied my hands and legs with the chair. She then backed away and started laughing hysterically.

Christy: Me, your mother. How funny is this? You were adopted. Your mother was a slut of a criminal who fuck her and you were born. As for that stupid man. He adopted you. I asked him many times to throw you out. You were a dirt. But he never listened. He asked me to leave if I was bothered this much. He chose you over me and his own baby.

She spat on my face bitterly. Her hatred could be heard easily in her voice and her tone. A son escaped my lips as I learned the bitter truth of my life.

Christy: So many times. I tried to kill you so many times, even you were weak and fragile, but you still survive every time. Every single time, you were between me and him. It took me years to get him just look at me. I spent four years making him love me. And that time came. I got pregnant and I had a hope that everything would be fine but your mother. She had to die the day I gave birth to Katy. It destroyed everything. You destroyed my life. You took everything away.

She yelled at me and I was not even able to process everything she was saying. She then stood in front of me and pointed the gun on my head. She started laughing hysterically while I was shivering in fear. But just then, I remembered what Norie had said to me. It was for Hendrick but it could be applied upon the woman I used to know as my mother. I gritted my teeth and looked up at her.

Cassie: What can you do? You will not torture me. Because you know if you keep me alive, you will be dead. Norie was right. What harm could you do? You will kill me, that is the least you can do. You think I am the same fragile Cassandra I used to be. No Christy Wolf. I am not that woman. Everything has changed. Last time, I was saved. Let's see, what would happen this time. Take your aim and try your best shot. Let's see if you have the power to change destiny.

I spat on her face with a smirk on my face. I finally learned the reason why she hated me. Why did that woman never care about me? Why that woman never appreciated me for my achievements. Learning the truth was painful. But she could not hurt me anymore. Gritting her teeth in anger, she took a few steps away from me. She started laughing and took her aim. She pointed the gun at the middle of my head.

I gulped as I realized the fact that I would not get a chance to say goodbye to the love of my life. That was the only thing that made me feel like I should cry. But I controlled myself. I was the daughter of agent Wolf. The man who never gave up. I just could not give up as well. I held my head high like a proud woman my father had made me. She pulled the trigger and I shut my eyes tightly.

I was waiting for the unbearable pain but it never came. I opened my eyes and found Hendrick Black between me and the pointed gun. He turned to look at me and that was when I saw blood pooling out of the fresh wound in his chest. He fell on the ground with a loud thud with his eyes locked with mine. I looked up at Christy who tried to pull the trigger again but Chris grabbed her arm and slapped her hard on her face. She fell on the ground and Chris kicked the gun she was holding.

Scott came from behind and my father also followed. Dad came to me and started untying me. Scott grabbed Christy and cuffed her. While Chris sat beside Hendrick Black. He peeled off his jacket and put it on Hendrick's wound to stop the bleeding. But the wound was in the middle of the chest. It was impossible to stop bleeding.

Once I was free, my dad helped me up and took me to Hendrick. He looked at me and for the first time in my life, I saw tears in his eyes. They were not in his eyes because of the pain. They were tears of guilt. Scott called 911 to get help while dad held me close to his chest.

Hendrick Black: I know I belong in hell. But I would be in peace if you forgive me ever. What I did, was not just cruel. There is no word made to define what I did. I never understood that I could have won you if I would have followed the path my brother had used years ago. I know I don't deserve it, but Cassandra, please forgive me if you ever can. You too Christopher. You are lucky that she is yours. Not everyone could be lucky enough to have a woman like Cassandra in his life.

Hendrick said and Chris looked at me. Hendrick coughed hard and then he lost consciousness. Chris checked if he was alive.

Chris: He is alive but his pulses are getting weak. We need to get him to the hospital, fast.

He said and as Scott turned around to call 911 again, detective Dean entered the room with medics. They took care of Hendrick Black as Chris came to me and hugged me tightly. Detective Dean arrested Christy. My dad went to her and looked into her eyes.

David Wolf: You will get your divorce papers in the jail. I won't bother you to get it. You have nothing to do with my girls anymore. You are dead for all three of us.

He said and turned around. Christy broke into tears as detective Dean took her away. Chris pulled me out of that building and dad and Scott were behind us. We all hopped into the car and I sat on the back seat with dad. I had learned the truth but I did not want to tell him anything. I knew how much he loved me. I just could not break his heart. I rested my head on his chest and he quickly wrapped his arms around me. I closed my eyes knowing that finally the nightmare that started about three years ago, it was over. Cuddling with my father, I fell asleep.

(If you want to know what happened to Hendrick Black, comment below and tell me what should happen to him? Should he be dead, because he was a monster? Should he be alive to get the punishment he deserves? Or should he be given a chance to prove that he is not like his father? Let me know in the comments. You will know what happened to him in the next story.)

CHAPTER 49

CASSIE'S POV:-

THREE YEARS LATER:-

Iris and I exited the meeting room and went straight to the office we both used. We both used one room as our office. And everyone was surprised as we never even argued with each other. Our partnership was stronger and more reliable.

Three years passed after that day. Everything was good. I never told my dad that I knew the truth. But with the help of detective Dean and Scott, I finally learned the whole truth about my biological parents. Turned out, Hendrick Black was not actually that kind of monster. My biological father was the real monster.

What he did to my mother, I just bore the consequences. His sins and the pain my biological mother went through, I was fated to hear it all so I could understand why my father never told me that I was adopted. And not just that, I had to pay for the sins my biological father had committed. What they say, you have to clear the accounts of your dead parents. Well, technically, that monster was still alive but he never knew that I was alive. He was told that I died with my mother.

Three years ago, my life was about to end but the very person who destroyed my life, he was the one who saved my life as well. The very next day, I found out that I was pregnant. Hendrick Black, the monster of my life was the one who had saved my life along with the life of my unborn child. I had never felt any emotions for him except for hatred. But after what happened, I just could not hate him anymore.

It took me some time to understand and with the help of my hubby, I was able to forgive him and forget everything.

My dad got him transferred in New York. And Katy and Jack as well settled in Brooklyn. As everyone knew, Chris never got his hands in the Hunt's business. After when I gave birth to my baby boy, my first born, Liam Hunt Jr. Mr Hunt decided to retire as he just could not give up the time with his grandson. He named Iris and me as the new CEOs of Hunt's Techs. He knew that Iris and I were great with our partnership. That was the reason he decided to hand the whole business to us.

I did not have only one baby. I was the mother of three children. Liam, Sandra and Bella. Sandra and Bella were twins. But I never actually got any difficulty while taking care of my children. Stella and Mr Hunt were very supportive. All three of them were attached with their grandparents. I used to get them after the birth only when I needed to feed them. Otherwise, my children were

always with their grandparents. Mr Hunt and Stella were not just supportive but also loving and caring. And whenever dad would visit, Mr Hunt and dad would challenge each other to get my babies to sleep with them.

I bid Iris goodbye as she drove away. I hopped into my car and drove towards Chris' school. My car had candies and chocolates for the children of Chris' school as always. I parked my car in the parking lot and I heard squeals. I smiled and did not bother to lock my car. As the kids ran towards my car, I walked towards the main office building. I opened the door to his office and he looked up. He smiled and signalled me to come in.

I stepped into the room and locked the door. I went to him and sat on his lap. He raised a brow at me and I leaned over his ear.

Cassie: I have some private accounts to clear up with you.

I whispered in his ear seductively and sucked his earlobe. He moaned softly and grabbed me by my hips. He stood up and I wrapped my legs around his waist. He took me to the room he had made behind his office for our steamy moments.

He gently laid me down on the bed and kissed me slowly. As if he was tasting my mouth after years. But in reality, we kissed each other last before we both hopped into our cars in the morning. He broke the kiss and smirked mischievously. My eyes widened and I shook my head to stop him from doing what he always had done. He nodded his head and tore my dress off of my body. He was about to attack when he noticed something. His eyes widened in shock as he read the message I had written on my belly with my eyeliner. He sat on the edge of the bed and quickly pulled me on his lap again.

Chris: Is it a prank or is it true?

He asked me in a shocked tone and I could not help but giggle. I cupped his face and pecked his cheek.

Cassie: It is true, Chris. I am pregnant again. You will become a father again. I will be a mother. It will be fun.

I replied in an exciting tone. He stood up with me in his arms. He started dancing in excitement and I slapped his shoulders to put me down.

Chris: I can't believe it. We are going to be parents again. You know, I want to kill that man who told me that the excitement will not be the same with the next pregnancy period. He said I would not be excited after my first baby. To be honest, I am more excited than the last one, every time.

He replied and I giggled shyly. He pinched my chin lightly and guided my lips to his. He pecked my lips and I smiled.

Cassie: Come on. Give me something to wear. I did not even tell Stella or Mr Hunt. We have to inform them as well. You are but planning to sit here all day and enjoy seeing me naked.

I asked him with a raised brow and he chuckled. He stood up and went to the wardrobe. He pulled out a dress of mine and helped me wear it. Once done, he grabbed my hand and pulled me towards the parking lot where he had his car parked. We both hopped into his car and he started the engine. He looked at me and I nodded my head with a wide smile on my face. He chuckled and drove towards our home, The Hunt's mansion.

The End.